This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

22415.30.15

Harvard College Library

FROM

James Byrne
of New York

a

WITH ESSEX IN IRELAND

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

HURRISH

MAELCHO

GRANIA

TRAITS AND CONFIDENCES

THE STORY OF IRELAND

MAJOR LAWRENCE, F.L.S.

A GARDEN DIARY

WITH THE WILD GEESE (*verse*)

WITH ESSEX IN IRELAND

BEING EXTRACTS FROM A JOURNAL KEPT IN IRELAND DURING THE YEAR 1599 BY MR HENRY HARVEY, SOMETIME SECRETARY TO ROBERT DEVEREUX, EARL OF ESSEX. WITH A PREFACE BY OLIVER MADDOX, M.A.

EDITED

BY THE HONOURABLE

EMILY LAWLESS

NEW EDITION IN ONE VOLUME

METHUEN & CO.
36 ESSEX STREET W.C.
LONDON
1902

22.4.15.

HARVARD COLLEGE
JAN 5 1917
LIBRARY

Gift of
James Byrne
of
New York

THE PREFACE

WHETHER the following Relation doth in ought conduce to a real Knowledge of what befel during the short and troublous Government of Robert Devereux Earl of Essex in Ireland, let the Fit Reader judge. Something natheless it may be well to add, seeing that the aforesaid Relation is both faulty in Construction, and singularly abrupt in Conclusion. For the Writer of it he was born in Northwich, of an Ancient and Honourable Family, and early entered the Household of that Nobleman whom he followed. For Education he was brought up at the Universitie of Cambridge, where he misspent not his Time, but acquired a sound Knowledge of the Mathematicks and other solid Attainments, yet was ever most inclined to stray into the Flowerie Paths of Apollo, and is the Author of a Poem entitled "VIOLANTILLA, OR THE MIRROR OF NOBILITIE," *which, though not of that Durable Stuff like to survive to a Deathless Immortalitie, yet hath a sweet Delectableness, conjoined to a seemly Simplicitie of Diction, both rare and delightsome to list to. He was still in Ireland when those Events befel which terminated in the Death of that Unhappy Nobleman whom he followed, which last Event happening before he could reach him, and thus tender even such Sorry Comfort as*

might accrue from his Presence, so affected him that he was for a while like to have died. Recovering presently, he left England, and entered the Household of the Elector Palatine, in which Prince's Service he expired in the Twelfth Year of the Reign of our late Sovereign King James of Blessed Memory.

For his Work now first printed, though it sufficiently testifieth to the great Love he bore to his Unhappy Patron, we might wish that it had been tempered throughout with a nicer Discretion, more especially in those Portions which relate to what took place in the Castle of Askeaton in Munster, and at the passage of the Lagan in Ulster, which Portions be, I must plainly avow, contrary in my Opinion both to Religion and Firm Reason. With which Observation I leave the Right Worshipful Reader to sup from it such Entertainment as he may.

His Majesty's and the said Right Worshipful Reader's Servant to Command.

OLIVER MADDOX, M.A.

From my Lodging in the Black Friars at London,
this 17th day of January 1638

hat he
esently,
Elector
in the
King

iciently
Patron,
t with
which
ton in
Ulster,
in my
which
to sup

ader's

A.

A Fac Simile of the Original
18
Part of
Scot
CANTYRE
Arran
Dunaverty
Sanda
Dunbrytan
Kyrk
Ail
Cowell
land
Glenarm
Knock
Carrickfergus
Red Bay
Red ca.
Count of Antrim
Dromnak
Crag ca.
Olderfleet
Antrim
Knockfergus
Belfast
Carrickfergus
Muherla
Talbot
South rock
Strangford ha.
Carrickmacross
Kilcony
Bryne
Bunderbya
Barbhat
Ratchad
Dromore
Lisburn
Lagan
Lisnagarvey
Lisnamaca
Ballyclare
Ballymoney
Ballymena
Ballycastle
Ballycastle
Ballycastle

WITH ESSEX IN IRELAND

I

TWO days we lay at Beau Morris, the weather being very foul, the winds continuing ever at the Northward and North Westward, from which points it were not possible for us to seize Dublin. Upon the third day we embarked, yet so fierce was still the sea and so violent the storm that her Majesty's pinnaces could scarce approach the land, the waves being lifted high in air, and falling with a great noise and roaring clamour upon the rocks. Very unlike were we to that gallant company which rode forth scarce two weeks earlier from my Lord's lodgings in Seething Lane, the people standing in crowds along Gracechurch Street and Cornhill, yea pressing exceeding to behold his Lordship, crying aloud, "God save the Lord Essex! May God preserve the good Earl!" the sun the while

shining bright, and our hearts lifted with joy and pride to be of so great and mighty a company.

Nevertheless I remember that when we had got past Iseldon[1] the sky, which had hitherto been clear, suddenly became overcast, loud thunderings breaking forth, and great hail falling, like stones descending from Heaven, whereat some of us grew pale, fearing that it betokened an evil issue of this our Enterprise. Only the Earl himself would hear of no such forebodings, saying that none but they that were of a sorry and doubtful stomach were moved out of their constancy by ought that the winds or sky could do, and so he continued throughout the whole journey, the latter portion of which was the worst that I in any country have encountered, more especially in that passage of the Welsh mountains called in their tongue Pen-men-Maure —a dreadful and savage mass of rocks rising up in the midst of the Queen's highway, most shocking to contemplate, and of great danger and impediment for those that have to travel on horseback across its declivities.

Now of the thirteen hours which we spent on board ship, and of the miseries endured

[1] Islington.

therein I will say nothing, for the remembrance of them is still grievous to me, as unto most of those that bore us company. For I remarked that the pangs of this sickness spared not even those that were of highest station, great Earls like my Lords of Southhampton and Rutland lying prostrate upon the deck in sore travail both of body and mind, even as did they that were of lower birth and station. For this sickness is like Death itself, and is a great and mighty Leveller, breaking down those partitions which God hath himself set and ordained between man and man.

Towards morning the wind however somewhat abated, and, the waves being less powerful, the pitching motions of the vessel became likewise less violent, so that I, leaving that place where I had lain all night, crawled upward upon the deck, being in very miserable plight, and cramped and stiff in every joint as I had been racked for many hours by orders of her Majesty's Star chamber. I had not stood there more than some ten minutes before the door of a small cabin which was to the right of me opened and his Lordship my Lord of Essex—or rather his Excellency the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland as I must henceforth learn to call him—stepped out from

the place consigned to him during the voyage. Seeing me he turned toward where I stood beside the taffrail, clinging by my two hands to a rope which depended from some portion of the furniture of the vessel.

"Ha Hal," quoth he, "art stirring already, my good sonneteer?" (so it was often his Lordship's pleasure to call me). "Nay but thou lookest sadly for a poet," he added, "and of a green and right dolorous countenance!"

With that he came forward, as his way is, and laid his hand in friendly fashion upon my shoulder. Whereat I would willingly have responded in suitable terms for his courtesy and gracious condescension, but could in no wise do so, being in truth in very evil case, and little stable upon my lower limbs, which seemed to belong rather to some other person than to myself, giving way below me at every lurching movement of the vessel.

Seeing how it was with me his Lordship smiled, and so turned away, and began to walk to and fro upon the deck, himself of a very ruddy and cheerful countenance, and moving with a free and lusty step, at which I marvelled greatly, being astonished how anyone could preserve his

balance in that unstable equilibrium. But indeed his powers exceed those of all men, upon sea no less than on land, and in those matters which are small and light no less than in those which are of a great and weighty import!

At that time the sea was still covered with great waves of a dull greenish colour, having upon their tops small portions of white, like to women's coifs, the sky too still overcast with clouds, moving over the whole eastern expanse of it. In the extreme west there was nevertheless a pale line visible, which was the first harbinger of that Land of Ireland towards which we were making, and beyond it a faint reddish glow seemed to be reflected in the sky, as though a candle or indifferent lantern had been placed near it.

Seeing this his Excellency stopped short, and gazed at it very earnestly for the space of some six minutes, like one that discerned more therein than could be seen by mortal eyes.

"Methinks our Kingdom is lighting up in celebration of our coming!" said he to me, smiling and turning a little, like one that expected a cheerful answer.

Whereat, alas! I would again gladly have

responded in meet terms, but could in no wise do so, my stomach being at the moment so sore disturbed, that with grief and pain I was obliged to refrain from speech altogether.

Now there had come up to the deck just then a young lad called Francis Gardner, the son of a widow lady of great virtue, and of a considerable estate in Somersetshire, which estate upon attaining his majority he himself was to inherit. But when first the talk began of the great company that my Lord of Essex was gathering together for the subjugation of the rebels in Ireland, the lad was mad to be allowed to go; saying that rather than not do so he would serve the Earl as a horse boy; whereat his mother with tears did long refuse him, declaring that she had been forewarned in dreams that if he went he would in no case ever return to her again.

But I (being over persuaded by the lad, having known him from the hour of his birth, and ever loving and cherishing him even as a young brother) took upon me, as I now see foolishly, to intercede with the lady, saying that I would be answerable for his safety, and, further to reassure her, I told her that these Irish rebels

would never dare assault us, we being in such great strength, and my Lord of Essex—my Lord Lieutenant that was to be—so tried and so terrible a soldier. And in this way with many tears and reluctantly she consented, seeing that the boy's heart was so set upon it that being thwarted in his wish, the grief and disappointment thereof might have worked him some lasting injury.

He, standing by, spake up boldly now in my Lord's presence, declaring that it was right and meet for Ireland thus to light her lamps in honour of his coming. "For sure," cried he, "the Jade knoweth well that he who approaches her is the One destined before all men to win her from her savagery, and to bring her to an understanding of those things that pertain to her welfare!"

"Beshrew thee, lad, 'tis to be hoped thou speak'st by the book there!" said his Lordship, smiling, and his face shone, as it doth when his soul is lit with great and noble thoughts. "Methinks as we draw near I could e'en leap into the waves as they say the Roman general Julius did, and so come sooner to land," quoth he, still smiling. And then he stood awhile, looking at that small light in the far distance, and we two

beside him, silent also, feeling that he were best pleased so.

"Nathless yon hath been a ditch into which every great and goodly reputation, since ever a Lord Deputy, or a Lord Lieutenant came to its shores has fallen and been lost," said he presently, yet rather as it seemed to himself than to us who stood by.

"The more Glory to him that is first to break through that evil spell!" cried young Gardner, boldly.

At which I was both proud and astonished to hear the boy speak so well, yet would have checked him nevertheless for his forwardness, as unbecoming a youth of his years in speaking to one set in station so high above him. But my Lord — that is to say his Excellency the Lord Lieutenant of Ireland—turned and looked at him with a kindly eye, as if pleased with his spirit and daring. In truth he is a gallant lad, of an open ruddy and joy-inspiring countenance, such as it lifts the heart to look at. Neither is his Excellency one that would with sour looks repel those that wait upon him, preferring ever love to a more cold and dolorous service.

He, turning presently away, set to walking

again, leaving the lad and myself standing where we were beside the taffrail. And as he walked I noted that he cast eyes of eagerness towards that land we were approaching, so that one who had seen him so walking and so looking, and wist not who it was, would have said—"Surely this is some great Lord who goes to meet that Lady whom he loveth?" Neither would they have greatly erred in so saying, for his Excellency, who is more of a poet both by nature and execution than many who profess themselves of that rhyming craft, oft spake in my hearing of this Land of Ireland as if she were in truth a woman, one who was froward, and had done many things contrary to order and reasonableness, being led away by those that would betray her to her own undoing, and yet withal not without much faithfulness of nature, who, were her affections once secured, might follow him whom she loved to the world's end.

And I who know his inmost thoughts, being so near to him—not merely in service, but also in the nearer and tenderer relations of the heart — know that in accepting this governance he was moved, less by pride and worldly ambition, which they who know him not are ever ready to

impute (judging his nobler heart by their own covetous ones) but by the thought of bringing back this land, which has strayed so far from civility, and leading her as a meet and a docile handmaiden unto our Queen and Mistress. Which thing, little like as, alas! it seems now to come to pass, might, it appears to me, have in very deed and truth been accomplished but for those envious malignings whose foul and evil mission seems ever to be on the watch to bring to naught all noble enterprise. Yea our royal Mistress did herself hold it to be not impossible, else had she never granted to my Lord such powers and authority, as were never given to any other Viceroy only to him alone. "Having"—as she herself said—"cast eyes on all her servants, and chosen him before all others, out of former experience of his faith, valour, wisdom, and extraordinary merit."

By ten of the clock we sailed into the bay of Dublin. The tide nevertheless being low we were forced to lie out midway between the Head of Howthe and the mainland, the river being ırgely closed in, especially towards the north ank, with a great quantity of sand, and the

water over it exceeding shallow. We landed at last in small boats or shallops at a place called the *Ring's End*, which is about a mile or less from the walls of the city.

Here his Excellency was met by the Lords Justices, also the Mayor, and Sheriffs, with the Pensioners, Captains, and other gentlemen, to the number of some five hundred horse, very fitly caparisoned, though somewhat scant methought in the matter of arms. They, receiving him upon his setting foot on land, set up loud acclamations, as though a very King or God had come amongst them, each endeavouring so to pass before the other that he might be the first to tender his obedience. All which his Excellency, receiving graciously, did with many courteous terms reply to; yea even we in our degree were constrained to utter many words of civility and satisfaction, which to speak truth we would fain in our hearts have refrained from, being still so sad and sore by reason of the buffeting of the waves.

Then, when all were debarked, we set forth from the water's edge, his Excellency riding Suleiman, his best-esteemed charger, and wearing a suit of plain armour, but over it a surcoat

of white, richly embroidered in flowers, with hose of velvet and riding boots of dark Spanish leather. There were not many along the road, save those already of our own company, and those few chiefly of the baser sort, who stared upon us with open mouths, stupid as sheep, or, if they louted, louting with a sullen and timorous aspect, like men who paid obedience, not from pleasure, but for very fear's sake; which louting nevertheless whenever my Lord perceived he with courteous gesture plucked from his head his own plumed hat, and doffed it in response, whereat the poor fools stared the more, being as it seemed but little used to the like courteous and comely behaviour.

After about half an hour's going, through ways so foul that the worst in England would have been fair by comparison, we arrived at the walls of the city, which are of a considerable height from the ground, and set about with stoutish towers at intervals. Here the keys of the city were presented to his Excellency, which he, receiving in the name of her Majesty, did with gracious words restore unto the custody the most worshipful the Lord Mayor.

Vhen the gates were flung open, and we had

ridden inside, in place of that vacancy through which we had passed we found ourselves suddenly in the midst of a great crowd and turmoil of people, pressed closely together as you may see pilchards collected for packing. Whom at first I took to be gathered because of the coming of his Excellency, but after a while found to be general over the city, being made up of all that had fled hither for safety, there being since the late lamentable disaster and triumph of the rebels no safety anywhere for the Queen's poor lieges, save only in walled towns. Yea, even the Earl of Ormonde, who until my Lord's coming did bear chief rule in this kingdom, hath for many weeks remained greviously pent in his own castle of Kilkenny, not daring for lack of force to take the field against those traitors, who seeing him thus in fear, have waxed more and more bold in their insolence, believing that none in all this realm durst gainsay them.

When therefore his Excellency appeared, the troops which had also debarked following him, and the banners flying and all the Lords and knights that had come over in his company riding behind and on either side, there arose a shout the like of which I have never heard. All that were near the

gate pressing forward to meet us with cries of welcome, the tears running over their eyes, and falling down upon their cheeks, the women holding up their babes to see us, nay scarce were they to be refrained from throwing themselves under the horses' feet, so joyed were they to behold him whom they did account as their Saviour. These as I afterwards learnt were mainly of English birth and breeding, being for the most part made up of those who with difficulty had escaped out of Munster, having been set upon there with great fury by the rebels, who having aforetime possessed all that province, esteemed this in their frowardness and wickedness to be a good time to repossess themselves of the same.

Finding that the Castle of Dublin, which is the chief seat of governance, had since the late Lord Borough's time become unfit for habitation by reason of the damp and neglect, in place of going there, my Lord alighted at the house of one Mr Usher, a gentleman of some reputation, possessing a good new house close by the Bridge's foot, which house had also several times been slept in by the late Lord Deputy Borough and Sir William Russell on their

first arrival. The same Mr Usher being amongst those that came to meet his Excellency, had, as we approached the town, parted company with us, and spurred on ahead so as to be in readiness to greet his Excellency on the threshold. Which he did, having beside him also two fair damsels, whom I took at first to have been his daughters, and marvelled greatly, perceiving them so little to resemble one another. Next day, coming to know them better, I discovered that one of them was a cousin, being in fact a ward, and orphaned of both her parents. Fairer gentlewomen I have rarely seen, and rejoiced within myself to behold such comely flowers blooming in so sad and waste a soil. In figure the daughter of Mr Usher was of middle height, of a willow-like grace, her hair fair, and so fine that it seemed under her coif to be of spun silk, her eyes like unto those of a dove, and her name, as I presently learnt, Agatha, which seemed to me made to suit one of so sweet and gentle an aspect. Whereas the other, who was called Mistress Bridget, was of a ruddier colour and more daring carriage, having eyes of a dark grey, with lashes extraordinarily thick, through which they shone with wayward gleams as doth the

sun upon a storm-tossed sea. Her other features were of less noteable aspect, the nose rather short, yet not displeasingly so, the mouth large but of a good shape, and the teeth of a whiteness which when she showed them seemed to sort well with that flashing of the eyes of which I have spoken.

For the Castle of Dublin methinks a fouler place, fitter for holding her Majesties prisoners (whereof it containeth at the present time many score), and less fit for the habitation of one who stands in her own stead I have never seen. What struck me most upon approaching it was the great number of heads and other portions of rebels with which it was as it were garnished. For not alone were they set over the main gateway [which is the natural and proper place for the heads and limbs of traytors to be disposed, and in which place we in England are used to behold them], but fastened on rude painted stakes set along the front of the Castle and upon the parapets, yea and in front of the windows. Which same appeared to me a foolish and even a somewhat barbarous and unhandsome custom. Neither were they as I was told of any great or noted rebels, but for the most

part sorry knaves, sent in from the borders of the Pale and elsewhere, O'Dempsys, O'Byrnes, and such like. The chiefest of them being that Feagh Mac Hugh O'Bryne, who was killed two years since in the time of Sir William Russell, a somewhat notable rascal, who did give the government in his time no slight trouble.

His Excellency himself was ill pleased I observed at this sight, and averted his head, as if sickened by the contemplation of so much dead flesh, he being at all times loathe to look upon such Trophies of Death, even where the same when alive were his own or the Queen's enemies.

Inside the Castle is very dark, the windows small, and the glass green, and not clear. The furnishings very poor, such hangings as there are being mostly half pulled down and torn, as they had been roughly plucked by some rude hand, the whole so foul, uncared for, and unhandsome that it were a pity to look at. It was with the greater satisfaction therefore, the business which brought him to it being accomplished, that his Excellency and we who were to share his lodging returned to Mr Usher's house, which is of a fair size and well furnished, the best in this respect of any house

I have encountered in Ireland, with the exception of my Lord of Ormonde's at Kilkenny, and another castle, the property of Sir Walter Raleigh, at present in the charge of one Mr Pine.

Both during his ride to the Castle and on his return to Mr Usher's house—after being sworn in and having received the Council—his Excellency was accompanied by a great press of knights and gentlemen, all eager to do him honour, who with much fair seeming and many civil words assured him of the great joy they esteemed it to see one of his fame and prowess as a soldier arrive to take command of this realm, which has of late suffered so much and sustained such injury, especially at the hands of that Arch rebel, and Fell Tyrant Tyrone, who has wasted the land at his pleasure, finding none to oppose him, but who being met by so approved a soldier as his Excellency, would doubtless now, they said, speedily bite the dust in shame and humiliation.

Nevertheless, even on this first day of our coming, I perceived some whose looks pleased me little, and from whom I augured small good, though with the rest they endeavoured to greet his Excellency with all fair seeming. Amongst which

I might number no less than four which be of the very Irish Council itself, yet will I forbear, not through favour, or from fear of ought that any man may say of me, but through reverence simply of their places' sake.

II

NEXT morning, being the 9th day of May of this year 1599, finding that his Excellency had for the moment no occasion of my services, I proposed to sally forth, and see such things as are deemed worthiest of note in this town of Dublin. Hearing of my determination the two damsels, the daughter of Mr Usher and her cousin, offered to be my guides, saying they would themselves show me such things as I ought to see; which offer I with many humble thanks right joyfully and gratefully accepted.

Leaving the house we set forth therefore from the Bridge's foot, keeping close along the city wall, one side of which here toucheth the yardway of Mr Usher, from which yardway to the Bridge gate is, as I was told, one hundred and four feet long, and the wall itself nineteen feet high and four thick. At this place the wall encounters the river Liffey, which at very full tide floweth against it, but at other times leaves bare a wide space, of

somewhat evil aspect and odour. Turning southward we next passed up Bridge Street, through sundry narrow streets or rather lanes, till we came to what is called the New gate, though now very old, and sorely in need of repair, and so past St Nicholas Church, where we again met the city wall, it being drawn in a tight circle round about the town, the whole less than one English mile, as I was informed, from point to point, and leaving many houses upon the outside utterly naked and unprotected.

Here we ascended one of the watch towers, whence a general view of the city was, the damsels said, to be obtained, as indeed I found, although the houses being close to us upon all sides somewhat impeded the prospect. Worse built houses I have rarely seen, the roofs of no two seeming to slope in the same direction; the walls in many places propped in strange fashion with poles and sticks, so that they most resembled a company of cripples, every man leaning for support upon his neighbour's arm.

That the town nevertheless stands well, and has a fair prospect I deny not. To the Eastward the bay is of a fine open shape, though a good deal shut in to the Northward by the Head of Howthe (the

same promontory we coasted the day before), while on the other side rises a range of hills of a fair acclivity and very green to look at. That these hills are of more plague than profit to the town folk, is however I take it plain, being waste ground, full of bogs, and rocks, which none inhabit save O'Byrnes, O'Tooles, and such like Fry of Satan, which same continually make incursions upon the town, so that even up to its gates men are constrained to hold their cattle in their hands, else are they of a surety driven away by the like arrant thieves and cattle lifters, these hilly places being but too apt to bring forth such unpleasant fruit.

Of nearer objects the chief was the Castle of Dublin, which, though mean and uncomely upon a closer view, wears from a distance a fair and substantial aspect, being quadrangular in shape, and well garnished with towers, the chief of which is called the Birmingham tower, the roof of it steep and beset with windows, giving light to rooms used for the safe keeping of state prisoners.

What at this distance most attracted my attention was that upon the topmost point of all, running as it were into the very blue of the sky, stands a tall and white-painted stake, upon

which, as I had already been informed of the knowing, it is the custom to set up the head of any Chief Rebel newly slain, which head remains there aloft in air till either it fall to pieces by natural decay, or till a yet greater than he be slain. And being so set, atop of all other things living and dead in the city, and having naught above it but the sky itself, and the birds of the air, or by night the stars shining so cold and clear, it is in waggery of the citizens called "THE ASTRONOMER OF DUBLIN" so that amongst loyal people of that town the saying commonly runs—"God send to Dublin many more such Astronomers!"

The same conceit has some years back been turned into rhyme by one Mr Derrick, a gentleman formerly in the service of Sir Henry Sidney, in whose poem we find it thus set forth—

His head is poled high,
  Upon the castle here,
Beholding starres as though he were
  A great Astronomier.

Of which poesy, [if poesy, good lack! it must be called;] we may fairly methinks reverse the saying and cry—"God send us no more such Poets!" though were the same singularity

fitly treated, and by one who understood the management and composition of verses, it might, it seems to me, form a no unworthy theme for a loyal subject's muse.

This thought—I standing there, and looking up at it, though at this distance seemingly the head of a pin rather than of a man—I was moved to utter aloud, yet by some accident did not do so, and as it afterwards appeared fortunately, for about an hour later, we having in the meanwhile made the circuit of the city, and entered the Castle between the two gate towers, I lingered to look into the moat or fosse, which is here of great depth and blackness, being fed by a small but foul stream running along the Eastward side of the Castle. And looking down, and wondering greatly at its depth and opacity, I was told by Mistress Agatha that prisoners confined above in the towers did frequently endeavour to escape by dropping themselves into it, having first cut through, or otherwise got rid of their fetters. But it rarely, she said, happened that any escaped thereby, owing to the depth of the fosse, the foulness of the mud, and the slipperiness of the sides, so that after many toilsome efforts

to escape if none came to their aid, they for the most part perished miserably.

"Marry, so better!" cried I merrily. "Beshrew me an' they like such a manner of death her Majesty is the better contented, and her revenue no doubt eased, not alone of the price of their food, but also of a stout hempen cord, which would else I take it be the natural end and shrift of all such froward and ungrateful caitiffs!"

Having uttered these words, which I protest I did in all simplicity, and without thought that 'twere possible they could offend any hearer I chanced to turn my head in the direction of Mistress Bridget, who stood a little to the left of me. But when I did so I beheld her face reddened with anger up to the very edge of her coif, and her eyes like two fiery coals, darting Death at me, I all unknowing what harm I had done. And—

"Not content with slaying, must you needs gibe and mock?" she began. Whereat the other damsel, her companion, ran to her whispering in her ear, and endeavouring to smooth her down, as you may see one ring-dove endeavour to smooth and comfort another.

But she would by no means listen, but broke away, turning her head again towards me as she went with eyes so full of wrath that I stood all silent, amazed, and alarmed. And the next moment she brake into torrents of weeping, such as it pitied me to see, and thus angry, and thus weeping, departed, hastening up a flight of steps, leading I knew not whither, so that we speedily lost sight of her.

Then the other damsel, [being left alone with me, and seeing me still stand amazed and confused], begged with many prayers that I would reveal to no man what she was about to tell me. Which I having strictly promised, she told me that her cousin, having been bereft from infancy of her parents, had in her early youth been brought up by certain Burkes of the family of Clanrickard, to which family her mother belonged, and had moreover been betrothed when little past childhood to a cousin of hers, one Felim Oge Burke, a comely and gracious youth some few years older than herself, who up to the beginning of the late wars had dwelt, he and all his kinsfolk, in peace and loyalty upon their own estates. When however the late great stir began the elder brother of this youth's

father fell away, and joined himself to the Arch Rebel Tyrone. The younger brother nevertheless still held aloof, in spite of which, he, being come upon suddenly, was by the Lord Deputy's orders seized and flung for greater security into prison, which so enraged him that, finding presently the means to escape, he brake from his allegiance, and joined himself to his brother and Tyrone, and, being afterwards again taken prisoner, was duly executed, together with some six or eight of his kinsfolk. But this youth—being so young, and having nothing found against him—was by the graciousness of the Queen's Majesty respited, and hath from that time unto the present, being six years, lain in prison in Dublin Castle, very grievously tormented with fetters, and in evil case by reason of the foul air engendered by those noisome vaults; and sore complaineth of his state, he having committed no sin, but suffering solely because of the misdeeds of others.

"Truly," said I, "his is a piteous case, and if opportunity serve I will not neglect to apprise my Lord of it, so that haply some alleviation may come to his state, and in due time with proper precaution he may perchance be set at

liberty. Nevertheless, sweet Mistress Agatha, it is needless I should expound to you, who art evidently a discreet and a God-fearing maiden, that troubles oft overtake men in this life, not merely by reason of their own sin and frailty, but also by reason of the sin of those that went before them. For what saith the Second Commandment—'He shall visit the sins of the fathers upon the children even unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate him.' What then is just and proper when done by an Heavenly Sovereign, must needs be just and right for an Earthly Sovereign to perform likewise."

"Verily sir," said pretty Mistress Agatha. "I am not wise enough nor learned enough in such matters to dispute with one who is my better, not merely in years but also in understanding. Natheless it seemeth to my poor reason that if the Queen's Majesty was but half ware of all that of this kind is done in her name in this realm of Ireland, she would give commandment to those that are set to execute her will and pleasure that they exercise a nicer discernment between those that are truly guilty, and deserving of chastisement, and they that by ignorance merely, or by the zeal of others are brought low, lest

haply some, still at large, finding that such evil hap befalls those that are taken, should grow desperate, and choose rather to take part openly with the rebels than to submit, and fall into the like evil case."

Hearing her speak thus prudently I was silent awhile, for in truth her words seemed to me full of reason, seeing how little even the wisest princes know of what goes on under their rule and sovereignty, but are themselves abused by those who for their own ends, and often from very wantonness, misuse their names.

Then Mistress Agatha, advancing, led the way before me up that flight of steps, onto a terrace which ran alongside of the Castle, being the same way by which her cousin Mistress Bridget had already gone. The sun was at that time shining brightly, a thing which as I had often heard, and ere long myself perceived, it seldom does in this Land of Ireland. The terrace was covered with grass growing tall and rank, showing that few passed there, but below there ran an under terrace leading to the bridge over the moat, which moat is, as I have already said, very deep, and running down to the bottom of the Castle vaults.

When we had ascended to the top we perceived Mistress Bridget standing a little way off looking down earnestly into this moat, her hands moving rapidly up and down as though she were speaking, yet was there no one near her.

Seeing this Mistress Agatha started, and made as if she would have gone back. Then, turning to me, she again besought me very earnestly not to betray her cousin, which I promising readily not to do, she revealed to me that the dungeon wherein was lodged that young Felim Oge Burke of whom she had spoken, lay below this terrace on which we walked, yet not so immediately below that he could descry one standing thereon. Nevertheless her cousin would from time to time, she said, walk there, and, the weather being fine and the sun shining behind her, her shadow would be thrown upon the wall opposite, in such manner that young Burke, looking from his dungeon window, could see and feast his eyes upon this her image and distant presentment. Which tale, thus told, moved me greatly, as it seemed to me that in all the tales of love I had ever heard or read I had never met aught more moving or more pitiful.

"Now by God's Grace!" cried I, "I were almost content myself to suffer the like imprisonment were I but assured that one would as willingly mourn and wait for me as your cousin, fair Mistress Agatha, does for this young Burke! Think you, sweet maiden, were *your* troth plighted to one that is no rebel, nor yet kin to rebels, but a faithful, if humble subject of her Majesty, and that some such evil hap befel him, would you also do as your cousin doth, namely mourn for him as truly, and wait for him as faithfully and as patiently?"

"Nay sir," said she casting down her eyes modestly, "that were scarce needed, since such an one were little likely to come into the like evil case, seeing that he would be set in no such strait between his love and his duty as is the case with the poor youth who is betrothed to my cousin. Verily it is only in this sad distracted country that a man is so set betwixt his kindred and his obedience that 'twere hard for him to know what to do or whom to follow, since whatever he doth that we may be sure will prove to be the very thing that for his own sake he were best have left undone."

With that her eyes again overflowed piteously,

seeing which my own could scarce forbear to keep them company, my heart seeming, as the Psalmist saith, even as wax in the midst of my body. And much I marvelled how the troubles of one who was after all but a Froward Rebel and doubtless a Papist to boot, should have so overcome me. Soon however I perceived that it was not his story, albeit a piteous one, but the manner and look of sweet Mistress Agatha, and the fashion in which she did tell of her cousin's grief. Indeed a sweeter and fairer maiden I have never seen, nor one whom a man might more joyfully take to his breast. And I—who am, I confess, but a very reed where her sweet sex is concerned—did greatly long to wipe away those tears which, though they dimmed her eyes, made them but the fairer, as a pretty and odorous flower is but the prettier and sweeter when it is overcast with dew. And, my heart being thus full, I poured out many words to comfort her; which words I do not now myself strictly recal, nor were it seemly if I did that I should set them down here, these pages being reserved for solider and graver matters. Yet this I may say that many words of sweet discourse passed between us that morning, and

that in all truth and humbleness it seemed to me that the maiden was herself not less well disposed for my company and entertainment than I for a surety was for hers.

For on the way back to Mr Usher's house—we having left Mistress Bridget to that sad exercise in which she took delight—my eyes seemed continually drawn as it were by magnets to her face, so that I could by no means detach them, which, she perceiving, hung her head modestly, yet not so completely down but what from time to time I caught sight of her blushing visage, nay more than once was favoured with a very soft and kindly glance from her eyes, which like the dart of Venus' Son so fired and enflamed my breast that I grew deeply enamoured of her tender perfections, and could scarce forbear in words to declare my passion. And, thus sucking in the Honey of Love, I walked along, rather as if on air, or the soft clouds of Heaven, than upon the miry ways of this foul city of Dublin.

"Oh thou strange and mysterious Divinity of Love!" said I to myself as I so journeyed. "Of what an unaccountable nature art thou, ever delighting to shoot thine arrows at a venture,

so that a man may depart from his house in the morning whole and unwounded, and return to it within the space of an hour so pricked, sore, and desperate that he can no longer call his heart his own!"

Yet, lest any think from these my inward utterances and interjections that so speedy a love must needs rest upon unstable foundation, this will I say in my own behoof [though little given to the folly of self-justification,] that I was never one of those hasty lovers whose suit all endeth in a few quick sighs, nor yet of those who like ramage kites see in each new Fair a prey, but have ever set my heart with a loyal and faithful service upon her whom I loved. For which reason perchance it is that it has been my lot to find trouble where I looked for solace, and grief when I most expected joy, a thing which has bred in me a sort of settled Melancholy, or despondent Humour, so that scarce do I look for ought now but sorrow and disappointment.

Still Hope is a sweet string even in the saddest lute, and therefore I, whose love-sorrows have been far greater than common—[as is known and admitted by all who have been witnesses of the same]—do nevertheless cherish a hope

of better things, and take Fortune's buffets with such patience as I may, hoping that having long whipped me with scorpions, she may at last perchance salve me with roses. Yet what is this life of ours at best but a Vale of Disappointment, so that in this world it is not a man's deserts, nor yet the extremity of his patience that will give him the recompense, else had we never seen some whom I could name exalted far above their merits, while others who by modesty and patience have deserved her favours, the cruel jade Fortune pays out with slights, and injuries. Yet that in so doing she but enableth them to prove the greatness, and tenacity of their love is to be admitted. For as hath been well said in a pleasant-conceited volume late writ and given to the world—"As the moon is never seen without the star Lunesiqua, so a true and faithful lover was never known to be without Unrest."

III

BEING early returned to the house and his Excellency having still no need of my services and my heart being so full of Mistress Agatha, tied as it seemed with knots to her tender perfections, I hastily took pen and tablet, and sat down to indite a sonnet; an habit which has ever been a solace to me, as to other lovers, alike whether their stars be kind or cruel, though not one to be indulged in beyond the limits of a due discretion. And this sonnet began thus,—

> Oh strange-hued love! great Nature's joy and ban!
> Thou wound, yet unguent of this dolorous earth!
> Thou sweetest torment of sad-hearted man!
> Thou gentle savage! thou distressful mirth!
> Here all forlorn I sit me down and sing
> Thy piercing darts, so cruel and so sweet;
> Whose tender sting such honeyed sorrows bring,
> Whose bitter joys . . . .

Now I had just reached the middle of this line, and was even debating in my mind what

should be a fitting rhyme to the preceding one, when I heard the voice of young Frank Gardner raised without, and another voice with his, seeming to dispute with him, and both coming closer and closer. Dropping my pen, therefore, I ran to the door, but hardly had I reached it before I was met and all but overturned by him and another young lad of his own age, who were coming along, and disputing lustily one with the other.

"How now Frank? How now?" cried I, so soon as I had regained my balance. "Do you take yourself to be in one of your West Country taverns where you may brawl your fill, or of what think you to let your voice be heard in this unseemly fashion in my lord's very antechamber? Nay shame gentlemen! shame! shame! What means this insolence? Down with your hands both of you!"

For he and the other youngster were squaring up to one another, and both had their hands on their swords, as if about to draw, and their faces red with anger; only that Frank's eyes were wide open, like two turquoise stones in a ring, whereas the other, whose eyes were dark and narrow in shape, had them cast down, and

an ugly look upon his face, which was of a sallow, spotty, and unwholesome aspect.

"Beshrew thee, Hal, hold thy tongue, and meddle not in my matters!" cried Frank, turning upon me, hot and angry as a turkey cock. "How shouldst thou judge between us, seeing that thou knowest not what this villain hath said? For when I spoke of my Lord having come to Ireland to chastise all traitors, and especially the Arch-traitor Tyrone who stands at defiance against her Majesty he scoffed! I tell you he scoffed at me! and declared that my Lord would never dare face Tyrone, no nor any Lord that the Queen could send, for that since the late defeat of the Blackwater the fame of Tyrone has waxed so great that no man durst meet him in the field, aye and that the very Queen herself and they that be of her Council have fear of him!"

"Nay I said not so" answered the other "I said that none had as yet done so, and moreover——"

With that Frank broke in again—"But I say thou didst!" he roared. "And will prove the same upon thy body! yea and think myself little honoured to fight one of so poor and dastardly a spirit! And as for this Tyrone of

whom thou pratest, I would meet him myself tomorrow with any weapons he might choose, either on foot or horse-back! Meet him! aye would eat him alive, and without salt too, rather than it should go abroad that none of English breeding durst affront him!"

"Come, come; enough of all this Frank!" said I "this place is not made for such loud swash-buckler language and bearing. And for you, young sir, whose countenance I know not," continued I turning to the other, "'twere better methinks you retired, and 'twere not ill perchance that you reflected too upon how little such a fashion of regarding the Queen's service is becoming to that uniform which I see you wear, or to the duty of an officer and man of quality; which duty is as is well known to foster the spirit and daring of his men, who by their baser birth are by nature less attuned to nobleness, and not to balk or discourage them by uttering ought that could cast doubt upon the sure victory of her Majesty's forces, still less to the vaunting of those vile traitors who have already grown only too strong through the weakness of those that opposed them."

Then the youngster (who was as I afterwards

learnt a cornet newly entered into the company of Sir Henry Harrington) bowed to me and departed, not sorry I took it to escape without further assault from so doughty an antagonist. But Frank could I with difficulty restrain, so hot was he with wrath, and so burning to reek the same upon all who should gainsay him. And, forcing him to remain with me, he raged to and fro the room, declaring that all whom he had as yet met in this country [save those who had come over in our own company] were little better themselves than rebels and traitors, and that their craven talk was enough to make a brave man blush, and that for his part he would gladly fight them all, aye every cowardly Jack of them, ere ever he advanced to the encounter of Tyrone, and the larger traitors.

So—having listened to him awhile and getting weary of his talk, and being wishful to return to my former recreation—I was forced at last to chide him in earnest, telling him that such language was unbecoming the modesty due from one that was himself but a beardless lad, and had never yet seen swords crossed in angry war; adding that he reminded me most of some child that, having been set by its Grandam a-

cock-horse upon a Painted Stick, holds itself henceforward to be a full-grown man and a warrior.

At which saying of mine—though I meant it in all kindness—he grew only the more furious, and burst away, nor would any longer be restrained; being ever, I grieve to say, of a hot and choleric temper, and not a little spoiled by his mother, who poor soul, (he being her only child, and fatherless from his birth), could never sufficiently love or make much of him. Yet this will I admit, though oft vexed by his unreasonable behaviour, that I have never known a lad whose soul was freer from that base sediment which, choking the free channels of youth, causeth it often to become muddy, nor one that showed a more generous and gallant spirit, so that few ever came to know him without speedily learning to love and cherish him above the common.

But touching Tyrone—which this quarrel betwixt Frank and the other youngster brings before me—this seems a good place to let the reader understand (as none who have not been in Ireland could in truth believe and know) that the fame of that vile Arch-rebel and Capital traitor has so gone abroad in this kingdom that

all men tremble at the very bruiting thereof. For beginning in Ulster, his main strength and the seat of his power, it hath spread into Connaught, (where the Burkes and other chiefs there are his close allies and abettors), thence to Munster, and afterward to Leinster, where all but the towns of Dublin, Kilkenny, and some few of the chief places of the Pale have fallen into his hands, the cattle too, which are the chief wealth of the country, being all in his possession, so that any force sent against him is like to starve. And this state of things has not come about suddenly, but has grown and strengthened for the space of two years past, being fed by the weakness of those that should have opposed it, and especially by that great and lamentable overthrow of Sir Richard Bagnal the Marshall at the ford of the Blackwater; where, (the two forces being equal or nearly so) the Queen's troops were miserably put to flight with great loss, shame, and discouragement, and the greater encouragement of those who take part in these foul and monstrous treasons.

That I have formerly heard my Lord maintain that this Tyrone was less absolutely blameworthy in the first instance than did appear I must admit,

he having, it seems, in past years, served her Majesty well as a soldier, both in Munster under the Lord Grey, and in his own province of Ulster, and would, my Lord held, have continued to do so but for the hindrances of those sent from England to bear rule in that province. In so saying however he judged that Traitor rather I believe by his own noble nature than by ought that appertaineth to the same, he being (so far as ever I could learn) brim-full of insolence and ungodly cunning, so that if his mind was ever set upon the paths of loyalty it has long since utterly departed therefrom.

But touching our present expedition, which chiefly concerns these pages, it was without doubt her Majesty's intention that so soon as my Lord should arrive he should proceed direct to the North, there to encounter this Arch-traitor and his following, so that he might quickly be taught obedience, and his proud stomach reduced to lowliness and humility. That such had been also his Lordship's own intention I who know his thoughts can by no means hesitate to declare. Yet occasion will arise which obligeth even the fullest and clearest purposes to be laid aside; as will be admitted by all save those so

assured in their own conceits that they make nothing of such hindrances as even God himself sets, and to which the greatest must bow. For when his Lordship was come to Dublin he found the new levies there gathered to be so poor, weak, and ill equipped as to be scarce worthy of the name of soldiers, having, as he himself said, "neither bodies, spirits, nor practice of arms." This being the case it seemed more agreeable to sound policy first to visit the weaker rebels, and, assuring the south and west frontiers of the Pale by sufficient garrisons, to raze those strong places in Munster and Connaught which have so long resisted the Queen's officers, and, having thus tested the strength of the army against what was less difficult and arduous, afterwards to proceed to that which was harder and more hazardous.

That this opinion was held, not alone by his Excellency, but also by all that under him bear rule in Ireland is clear, seeing that the letter to her Majesty and the English Privy Council was signed by the whole Irish Council, to wit, amongst others — Thomas, Lord Bishop of Meathe, Sir George Carew, Sir Nicholas Walshe, Sir Conyers Clifford the President of Connaught, Sir Henry

Harrington, Sir Warham St Leger, Sir Geoffrey Fenton and others. Nay, not merely did they counsel it, but earnestly pressed it upon him, advising him—"that it was expedient for her Majesty's service that the invasion of Ulster should be for a time respited, and a present prosecution put on first in Leinster, that province being ever the heart and centre of this Kingdom.

Words, however, [especially such weak and impotent words, as I may hope to utter] are I know of little avail in the face of such loud-winded bugges, and foul lies as have been set abroad in this matter; so that even those who know best to the contrary shame not to utter them, declaring that through slackness it was on my Lord's part that Tyrone was not sooner met and overcome. Whereas all who have seen him can declare how he hath laboured day and night, not sparing himself, even when sore wasted by illness, but being ever at work upon the Queen's service. A thing the more readily proved but that like some noble eagle he is one that pursueth his own way heedless of the clamour of meaner creatures, until, becoming all at once aware of their malice, he turns upon them with

beak and claws; thereby unhappily often in his anger rather aiding their slanders than establishing his own right and innocency.

For this since ever I knew him I have remarked in my Lord of Essex, that whereas other men injure themselves by their faults, he rather by his virtues, and by that noble boldness of his nature which can by no means be concealed. For so frank is he by constitution that even in the presence of the Queen's Majesty he will utter nought but what he holds to be the very Truth of Truths, opening his soul before her with a freedom seldom to be heard of Sovereigns, more especially one ever accounted a Goddess, rather than a Queen or Woman, and little fitted therefore to brook opposition, even where the necessities of State require the same. Who, being at the present time somewhat enfeebled in health, suffereth contradiction the less patiently, though none the less now as throughout her reign endowed with every great and glorious quality, in which she so far exceedeth in splendour not only every Monarch that at the present time breathes upon the Globe, but also all who in the most distant pages of History have ever been seen, known, or heard of!

IV

FOR the rest of our stay in Dublin, little methinks remains to be recorded, the chief event of the time being that great disturbance caused by the displacement of my Lord Southampton, who had on his arrival been appointed by the Lord Lieutenant General of the Horse in Ireland, which appointment their LL. the Lords of the Council did at her Majesty's order command to be cancelled; a command which his Excellency at first refused to obey, declaring that her Majesty had in his commission given him full liberty to make choice of all such officers and commanders of the army as he thought fitting. This their LL. could by no means deny, nevertheless, [her Majesty being so fully determined, and my Lord Southampton by reason of his late marriage in sore disfavour] his Excellency in the end was constrained to obey; which he did very unwillingly, declaring that such changes in the face of the enemy but

encouraged the rebels, and dismayed the army, of which two large a portion was already disposed to look upon this expedition as but a cold and comfortless action.

Touching mine own poor matters—which have no right, I know, to find place in a record given to those of larger and more weighty import—this may I say that it was my happiness to hold sundry further discourses with fair Mistress Agatha Usher, which discourses were both pleasant at the time and joyful to remember; and that upon my departure I prayed her acceptance of a small Casket of Poesy, or Modest Handful of Dainty Delights, a request which she graciously complied with, promising to read therein, and now and then as I prayed her to reflect upon their poor Author. And this promise she made, looking so modest and withal loving, that I rode away, poor Fool, my heart overflowing like some great river, and my spirit stirred to martial deeds like a very Paladin. A mood which I must honestly say is not with me habitual, I being rather given to the ways of peace than of war, though through my service to his Lordship often finding myself amid the clash of swords, on which occasion I have never

failed to acquit myself so as to win no little commendation from all that were witnesses of the same.

The fourth day of May being come and the levies gathered together, the Lord Lieutenant rode forth from Dublin to the champion fields between Kilrush and Kilcullen, where he had appointed to meet him twenty seven ensigns of foot and three hundred horse, which he proposed to divide into regiments, appointing colonels for the same. These troops being already assembled upon the field, as soon as they saw his Excellency riding up, raised a great shout, so that the very sky seemed filled with the noise, and all drew their swords and waved them, shouting together with one voice—"God save Ireland's Governor!" "God preserve the noble Earl of Essex!"

At which sound, and the tumult it bred, young Frank Gardner, [who that day rode beside me, and could scarce even before be contained, so great was his joy to find himself at length in truth a soldier, and in the field], suddenly snapped his sword out of its scabbard, and waved it thrice over his head, shouting lustily the while. And this shouting, continu-

ing after the others had ceased and his voice being so young and fresh, and coming from our own side, was heard throughout the entire army, so that his Excellency himself turned round, and laughed to see the boy so proud. Whom I would have silenced, being surprised that he should thus demean himself without license given, but his Lordship commanded me to forbear, swearing that the lad was after his own heart, and that he would he had Ten Thousand of him, so that he might the more readily bring those rebels to submission which sinned against her Majesty's patience, and troubled the peace of the Realm.

These champion fields are called by the natives "Curaghs" and are of a very singular size and flatness, the grass which covereth them short but of a close consistency. A better place for the deploying of an army I never beheld, nor could I forbear to wish that the Arch-rebel Tyrone and all the other enemies of the Queen's Highness would but encounter us here in their strength, so that we might the better make an end of them.

That night, there being no town nearer than the Naas, we were forced to lie in a village called

Kilcullen, a sorry cluster of mean houses, and they so few that he who had a roof to lie under was accounted happy. Young Frank Gardner, and myself lay together in a small hut or cabin which had been assigned to Sir Conyers Clifford, the President of Connaught, who courteously proffered us a share of his quarters; which truth to tell were neither commodious nor savoury, indeed so foul a hut I never thought to set foot or nose in.

It being the first night of taking to the field since our coming to Ireland the confusion was great; there being as yet no tents, so that they that could not find shelter under a roof, must needs sleep under the open sky. In every direction there were squires searching for their masters; great Lords not knowing where to lay their heads; horses fastened with stanchions to the earth; cloaks of great price flung heedless upon the foul and muddy ground.

This village of Kilcullen lies upon either side of a bridge of planks which crosses the river Liffey, the same which passeth through Dublin, and which here winds with wondrous sudden twists and turns. In number it contains perhaps twenty cabins, the owners of which had fled

leaving them empty [saving for certain inmates whose company might well have been spared !]. Fitter place for the harbouring of pigs, and less fit for the quarters of a great Earl and General in Chief of her Majesty's forces 'twere difficult in truth to imagine.

My Lord's own quarters were in the principal house in the village, which, being two stories high, was doubtless of these savages accounted a palace. When I went in to him he was sitting upon a great heap of straw gathered together in the middle of the room, with a light fixed above his head, and a letter newly writ upon his knee.

"Well Signor Pegaso!" quoth he, laying down his pen as I entered. "And what thinkest thou of these quarters of ours? Didst ever see loftier or prouder roof than yonder?" pointing over his head to where the sorry thatch was broken, so that through it one could descry the sky, and a faint twinkling of stars which had now begun to shine in the midst thereof.

"Truly my Lord" said I "'tis a rueful sight, and 'twould pity her Majesty's heart methinks could she see you as I do at this moment."

"Not so Hal, I thought you knew her Grace's mind better. For what wrote she to my father

when he laboured in this Irish service even as I do now ''Twere better' quoth she 'to desire to live in action, rather than to fester in the delights of this English Egypt, where the most part of those bred in the soil find their chief joy in holding their noses over the beef pots!'"

"For beef pots my Lord," said I ruefully "there be none here that I can see, and for my part I were not sorry, I own, we were more like to enjoy the savour of the same."

"Ho! ho! soft and sweet, great Son of the Muses!" cried he laughingly. "Has that poetic soul of thine sunk to this pass already? Nay man take courage, and buckle in thy stomach belt a bit tighter, lest the divine Afflatus inside escape thee altogether for lack of sustenance!"

Then, (seeing that I looked abashed, and had no response ready, jesting speech being apt I own to find in me a lagging playfellow) he enquired more seriously how I fared in this disordered camp, where few had aught to lie on or to eat. Whereupon I told him of the kindness showed us by the President of Munster, how he had offered myself and young Frank Gardner a share of his quarters, whereby we should have at least some roof atop of us (albeit a poor one) and

not have to couch like swine upon the filthy earth.

"'Twas well thought of" replied his Excellency, "and I am glad that thou and that wild lad of thine have found shelter, since 'tis hard on an unseasoned youth to begin his soldiering upon sore bones. Touching Sir Conyers too, his good-will is the plainer you-wards, seeing that he does it not to gain favour in my sight, I having for a good time past held him to belong rather to the faction of mine enemies than mine own."

"There I am sure" cried I "you wrong him my Lord!"

"Say you so Hal? May be, and in truth I find myself so bound about with lies and liars, that an honest man, were he ten thousand times my enemy, were better to me than one of yonder crook-tongued, court-infesting knaves. By the Thunders of God! I know not how a plain man keeps his hands off them! I tell you, Hal, my gorge rises at the bare thought of them, even as at the thought of so many toads and adders. Nay more, for those beasts but spread their slime according to the nature God gave them, whereas these others out of sheer evil heartedness, trying

how to entrap those that be fairer and of more open nature than themselves."

So saying his Excellency began to pace the room to and fro with a disordered countenance, showing me plainly that some new cause of displeasure were stirring within him. Finding that he spake not again I presently enquired whether he had any commands to give me, or if there was ought I should write at his dictation. To which he replied that he had but to finish one letter newly writ to her Grace, which must be needs be done with his own hand, and that for the rest tomorrow would suffice.

With that, smoothing his countenance somewhat, he took up again the letter which lay beside him. And as he passed his eyes over it, presently his lips began to twitch, as if some sudden conceit was stirring within him. And——

"By Nemesis!" cried he, slapping down upon the paper with his hand, "I talk, but I am of the same Sorry Crew myself! I tell thee, Hal, I scarce know myself sometimes when I read what honeyed words seem to have slid along my paper. Assuredly Francis was right when he told me that my pen was a safer ambassador to her Grace's favour than my tongue. For I can spin as

courtier-like a letter as any of yonder rascals that juggle with words, but when it comes to open speech—God's mercy upon me!—either my temper or my honesty leaps abroad, and the Devil is in it if I know which of the two is most out of place at court, or most like to bring a man to trouble there."

"Others can give your Lordship prudent advice as well as Master Bacon," said I.

"Meaning thyself, most discreet of counsellors?" "Nay, be not jealous, good Wisdom! be not jealous! Believe me I apprise your fidelity at its full value. And for other matters one would not sure have all one's councillors cut out upon the one pattern, and a second Francis—if indeed two Francis Bacons are to be found in any universe—would I confess be the death, end, and undoing of any man's faith in his fellows, which for my part I desire not; for though Suspicion, I admit, is a wise dog, yet Trust, as I have before told him, I believe at bottom to be a better one."

"Methinks such suspiciousness comes of looking too closely into his own heart, my Lord" said I. For in truth this Master Bacon is no favourite of mine, nor, as I judge, always the soundest of councillors to his Excellency.

"Of looking too closely into the heart—if heart is the word—of that foul Creep-thing a courtier, Hal, who, as Francis hath himself said, would crook all things to his private ends, and willingly any day set fire to a house so long as he could thereby roast his own eggs at it. But no more o' them! Their very name corrupts the atmosphere, which in this close and dung-bestrewn cabin is, by my Faith, none too savoury already. Meanwhile, go thy ways, good fellow, go thy ways, and betake thee to rest, if rest is to be had. And hark, a word in thy ear! Tell the President of Connaught I would fain have some private speech with him, and that I beg him therefore to come to me here ere we set out in the morning, that being like to be the surest and least observed time."

To this I replied that I would do so, and, having made my bow, I departed, thrice missing my way between his Lordship's lodging and the one which I was in search of, and getting all befouled with the filthy mire, which in many places was knee deep and over.

But when I at last reached the cabin where I was to sleep I found a great case or box had been dragged into the midst of it, and on it were set forth sundry bottles, likewise a goodly

round of beef, and capon pie; a sight which I own caused my heart to leap up gladly within my body, I having greatly feared to go to bed wholly supperless that night.

And at the head of this box now conformed into a table sat good Sir Conyers Clifford, with his helmet, which he had worn all day, laid aside showing a great scar running across from the forehead nearly to the chin, by which his face was much disfigured, yet not so badly but what it was as goodly and soldierly a one as I desire to look on, albeit so rugged and wrinkled. And on the left hand of him sat young Frank Gardner, with his helmet doffed too, and his blue eyes all of a dance, and his face still smooth as a maiden's in May, and in his hand a great clasp knife, which he was plunging deep into the bowels of that pasty. And with them sat two other gentlemen, one of whom was unknown to me, the other being a cousin of Sir Conyers, by name also Clifford, who served under him as his equerry.

But when Frank Gardner espied me at the door he set up a great shout of welcome, as though he and none other were Lord of that good cheer, and desired that I would straight-

way enter in, and sit and eat of all that was going.

"How now, how now, Master Malapert?" said I rebukingly, "knowest thou no better, nor canst do greater credit to thy breeding than to roar out thus like a young bullock in a clover field? Nay the Lord President of Connaught is far too good to thy unhandsome deserts. 'Twere fitter thou wert sent to sup with his horseboys, till thou learnest respect for those that are set over thee by Nature and Providence!"

"Pooh, pooh; chide not the lad" said good Sir Conyers kindly. "In truth it pleasures me to see one to whom life has still a goodly savour in the mouth, and for whom a journey like this, to most of us but a burdensome and little honourable enterprise, is an occasion for rejoicing. Marry he will learn but too soon to find the briars and thorns that grow on every bush, so let him pluck the roses while he may! Meanwhile prithee approach, good Mr Secretary, and help yourself to what there is, which to tell truth is more than I expected to find, seeing that everything is still in such confusion and disorder."

At that I approached to the board, giving him

many thanks, and sat down gladly on a great heap of hay, gathered for the foraging of the horses. Under our feet was nought but the puddled mud of the cabin, such as these savage creatures use to sit on, and the roof overhead so low and so rotten that any rain dropping through would speedily have wetted all below.

But Frank,—little daunted by my rebukes which he ever heeded only too little—was like one that had already drunk his fill, so glad was he, and his tongue babbling continually, like the tongue of some young sea-pye late escaped the nest. And amongst other weighty matters he told me that Sir Henry Harrington, by whose side it seems he had ridden that afternoon, had offered him a cornetcy in his company, and that he was hugely minded to accept the same, expecting to see more service, and to get a larger share of fighting than he otherwise might.

"Nay, Frank, softly, softly; we will talk of this anon," said I. For in truth I liked not that Sir Henry Harrington over much, and had heard but ill things of the courage and discipline of his soldiers; also I desired to keep Frank under my own eye, having been so largely the occasion of his coming to this country, and having many fears

lest his rashness and inexperience should bring him to speedy danger.

Then, the solidest parts of the viands being all eaten, we set ourselves to dispose of the wine, which was both abundant and choice. But before doing so, Sir Conyers, rising with a full cup in his hand, called out in a loud voice—"Success to the Earl of Essex, and God confound the Queen's enemies!" which toast being drunk by us with loud acclaim—Frank Gardner's voice needless to say loudest of all—there came running in to us three or four gentlemen from my Lord of Southampton's lodging, which was hard by; and they, finding how matters were, stayed also, and so by degrees others gathered, till there was a good score or more in the room, and a strange sight it was to see so many fine cloaks and gallant gentlemen and goodly weapons pent in that foul hut, which till that day had never, I ween, seen ought but the stabling of pigs, or of such as in point of breeding differed little from the same.

One of these gentlemen, Captain Hubert Blackett by name, a captain of an hundred under Sir Alexander Ratcliffe, being endowed with a good singing voice, and some knowledge of harmony, was persuaded after some little entreaty

to sing to the company. And afterwards another gentleman and another did the same. Then Sir Conyers—having heard that I belonged myself to the Rhymer's craft—would have it I must favour the company with some taste of my quality; which proposal I would have declined, not alone from modesty, but from having nought in my wallet that seemed suitable to the occasion, or to so mixed a company.

Despite of all I could say, however, he would take no denial, and they that were sitting there also importuned me, especially Captain Blackett; saying that when one had played or sung it was the duty of the rest to do their part. So, being over-persuaded, I rehearsed certain lines that I had recently composed since my thoughts had been running upon fair Mistress Usher. Which lines I here set down, praying the reader to understand that their poor quality must not be taken as a sample of what I may or in past times have done of the same sort.

Like to a plot of fairest garden ground,
Where all compacted sweets united lie,
Is She whose image my sad soul doth bound
With thought and love of her eternally.
And every mile but adds a lengthening chain
To that soft gyve which causes all my pain.

Shall roving Phœbus ope his wanton eye
On the pure heavens of her most tender face?
While I alas! in weary exile lie
And banished far from hope of love and grace?
And every mile but adds a lengthening chain
To that soft gyve which causeth all my pain.

This woeful land wherein I sadly stray
Is not so sad as my fond heart and true,
Far from that Lady whose soft grace I pray,
To whose deserts my hourly vows are due.
And every mile but adds a lengthening chain
To that sad gyve which causes all my pain.

. . . . . .

Now there were about ten verses more, but, ere I had concluded this last one, and while the words were still in my mouth, Frank Gardner, who all that day had been excited above his wont, sprang from his seat, and striking lustily with his hand upon the board, so that all thereon rattled, cried to me in a loud voice that my song was of too sable a hue for the time and place, and did rather dispirit the hearts of those that sat there, than add to their merriment, or encourage them to valiant deeds.

"Marry" quoth he "I had as lief be a monk and drone pater-nosters as utter my soul with the like dolorous ditties! Women are fair, and I their humble servant yet a *Man* is a *Man*, and it were

a poor tribute to his manhood if all his thoughts must needs run upon what he has left behind him, so that he can spare none for that which lies before, and on which his manhood chiefly depends! By the sword and helmet of Mars! no such puling love for me!

With that he began to troll out some verses he had picked up, Heaven knows where, which in truth were of little credit either to him or their maker, and which as far as I remember ran thus—

By all the loves and all the doves
And all the sighs that lovers sigh!
By all the arts and all the darts
Of Cupid's feathered panoply!
Not every Fair that walks the earth
Nor every Goddess in the sky
Should keep *my* soul in Love's confines
When I might hope to do or die!
When I could go
To the wars, Heigho!
With my helmet laced,
And my breast-plate braced,
And my good sword strapped to my side, Heigho!

Shall Love's alarms deter the brave
His arrows set him flying Oh!
Shall fetters make his soul a slave
And set his breast a sighing Oh!

No, not though Cupid's fiery dart
Shone fierce in every Fair One's eye,
Would *I* forswear the soldier's part
Where I might hope to do or die !
When I could go
To the wars, Heigho !
With my helmet laced,
And my breast-plate braced,
And my good sword strapped to my side, Heigho !

Not all the sighs or all the tears
That women's beaming looks inspire !
Not all the hopes or all the fears
That set men's hearts and breasts a fire !
Shall keep *my* soul in Love's confines
When I may hope to do or die !
When I can go
To the wars, Heigho !
With my helmet laced,
And my breast-plate braced,
And my good sword strapped to my side, Heigho !

Which song, thus sung, and the round face and soft beardless cheek of the singer, who boasted himself so loudly to be a *Man*, set all the company a laughing. Nay, I myself could scarce forbear to join, albeit not a little displeased to be so openly mocked of him before them all. And in my mind I privily resolved to give Master Frank a sharp and wholesome reprimand upon the very first occasion I found myself alone with him.

And (the evening now growing late) after a few more sallies of merriment the company dispersed; the gentlemen gathering up their swords and cloaks, and departing to their own quarters; we seeking what repose so poor and damp a sleeping place might be looked to furnish.

V

NEXT day the army advanced towards Athy, which is upon the river Barrow, over a flat country, much desolated by the tribes of the O'Byrnes, O'Moores, and other fierce and pestilent rebels. And I, being newly come to Ireland, looked round me in terror of heart at the waste and desolations through which we passed; though afterwards, by comparison with what I saw later, I then esteemed this part prosperous and well liking.

His Excellency was riding in front of the army, with the Earl of Southampton on the one hand and Sir Conyers Clifford on the other, with whom that day I observed that he held much discourse. I was myself about a company and a half behind, and as those in front halted to allow the rear-guard to come up, I too stood aside to watch the army as it deployed through the narrow space. A gallant sight and goodly it was to see so many well armed men and fair steeds; the footmen, too

carrying their pikes and halberds. Yet methought there was little of that joyousness which should illumine a soldier's countenance when he goes to meet the foe; nay, many of the faces on which my eyes rested wore a lowering and malcontent air, as though their owners' minds turned to other thoughts than their joy as a soldier and their duty to the Queen's Majesty.

There happened to be riding beside me on that occasion one Colonel Sethcock, a gentleman of some 45 or 50 years of age, who had come over to Ireland during the Desmond wars, and had since remained here, attached for the most part to the train of the Earl of Ormonde; whom I had never seen before, and in truth liked not greatly, though it was said that he had done good service. For his talk ran on the slaughter that in former wars had been wrought amongst the rebels; not so much upon those taken in arms (against whom no severities could be too great) but upon those that resisted not, but were nevertheless slain, though demanding their lives with earnest prayers and supplications; and of the women too and children of rebels, that were taken as hostages; the latter being for the most part too ignorant by reason of their tender age

to judge between right or wrong, yet were nevertheless slain, sometimes even with torture, for the greater punishments of their parents. So that I grew vexed at such talk, which seemed to me unbefitting a soldier; being not of doughty deeds, but of such acts as a man, even if constrained to permit, doth so reluctantly, and in no wise glorieth to look back upon. And, for my part, I was sure, I said, that my Lord would never give ear to such counsel, nor permit of such doings, which seemed in my poor opinion to savour rather of savages than of soldiers and Christian gentlemen.

At which saying of mine Colonel Sethcock laughed loudly, smiting his thigh the while.

"Nay," cried he, "if his Lordship is of so pitiful a temper he will scarce do for Ireland, where mildness is of as much use as tender handling avails for the throttling of savage beasts."

"Even savage beasts," I replied, "are tamed, not by those that are savage like themselves, but by those who, being better than they, have become their masters, and so subdue them to their uses."

"You will sing a different song Master Secretary when you have been here a little longer!" quoth he.

And then, for very despite as I thought at my words, he went on to tell other tales, which exceeded all ever I heard, and especially of one village—the name of which at present escapes me—where he, being present, he said, with a goodly company of soldiers, did drive all that were therein, men, women, and children, into a bog; and this bog being of great deepness, and they prevented by the soldiers from escaping, they all perished miserably.

Which deed, [though done I admit against rebels], fairly turned my stomach, so that I moved away, and would no longer keep company with him, but consorted afterwards that day chiefly with Captain Charles Warren, brother of Sir William Warren, and accounted at that time the handsomest man in the Irish army; who though barely 30 years of age had for his services received early promotion, and already commanded many that for age and length of service stood higher than himself.

To him I opened my mind, being still full of these matters, and knowing him to be discreet, and to have already acquired a sound knowledge of the things that pertain to this land; which of all lands that ever I heard of seems the one most difficult for a stranger to understand, and in which all

rules elsewhere laid down for a man's guidance seem to be as it were reversed and made invalid.

"It is of a certainty a hard country, as you truly say, Master Secretary," said he. "And this I will tell you that when first I came to it my stomach often turned, even as yours doth, at the very name of things which at last grew to be little accounted by me, save as matters of daily occurrence. Nay, in the first expedition I was engaged in against the rebels in Ulster, the cries of those we slew, and of the women especially, rang in my ears, so that I could get no sleep for thinking of them. And oftentimes I would say to myself 'What fashion is this to treat men, who, if they are savages and rebels, are still of flesh and blood like ourselves, created in the self-same image of Almighty God? And if they are papists, marry, why so were our own fathers or grandfathers, so that seems scarce sufficient reason for treating them like beasts, without souls or natural feeling.' Little by little however it came to be clear to me that there was but one way of dealing with this country, and that was to slay without ruth or remorse, so that, if for no other reason, the very terror and expectation of the like treatment might keep the rest from rebelling. And this I may

tell you, Master Secretary, and it is, (if you forgive my saying so, being I believe somewhat your junior) a lesson you were wise to lay to your heart, namely that when a man's duty bids him do a thing, were he the tenderest soul that ever wept at sight of another's wounds, he must learn to stomach it, and say naught; so that by degrees, the habit coming with practice, he will learn to see unmoved things which at first sight made his very soul to heave and sicken, and his hand to fly to the sword for the avenging thereof. For see you not how many things in life must needs be done, and resolutely done, which in themselves seem cruel and piteous. Yea even the very slaughter of sheep and oxen, and the wringing of the necks of pullets, turn some tender stomachs. Consider too the cutting off of arms and legs, and the cauterizing of wounds with red hot irons, which must be done to save life. How think you the surgeons would ever learn their trade if their hearts were so tender that at the first loud cry they gave way? Then take you again executions, which are part of the duty of a state, necessary for the punishment of malefactors, and under the special sanction of Holy Writ, how often they seem to the natural man cruel and unnecessary? I

remember not long since I was coming past the place of execution at Devizes, very early in the morning, and they were executing an old woman who had stolen six penny-worth of bread, and I who speak to you Master Secretary may confess that when I saw her struggling to escape, and two men holding her, and her grey hair all disordered, and her face contorted with the pangs and terror of death, it was as much as I could do to hinder myself from going to her aid; for after all she was a woman and an old one, and there was something about her, too, which minded me, I know not why, of my mother, for whose sake all old women are dear to me, save such as do practise Witchcraft, and are for that reason properly and naturally abhorred both of God and man. So too mutilation, and the racking or other torturing of criminals that refuse to confess to crimes committed by themselves or others. What can be more displeasing to the natural man? Nevertheless those learned in jurisprudence hold that the latter is a thing necessary to be retained, to be used of course with due discretion, and never without the sanction of some civil officer, but as a mode of extorting confession an indispensable handmaiden and assistant of the Law. From which digression return

we to this question of Ireland, and to the means by which it is to be brought into subjection. And with regard to that severity, which like yourself I am at times disposed to deplore, I tell you plainly that since coming to know the country, and especially since hearing the talk of those whose knowledge of it is of longer standing than my own, I perceived that these creatures its inhabitants, not having as it were the semblance of knowledge or civility, can only be restrained by force; having, as Scripture saith, a bridle set in their mouths, lest, being left to their own evil devices, they suddenly turn and rend you. And now, with your pardon, I am somewhat weary of speaking, which in this moist air is a thing trying to the throat and lungs, especially upon an empty stomach. And you must set my loquacity down to my regard for you Master Secretary, and to my desire that you likewise should acquire that philosophy which in this matter has come to me, though not I may say without some travail both of mind and of conscience."

With that I thanked him heartily for his good counsel, and for the care he had shewn for my interest; and, falling back a little, I rode along for the space of an hour or more by myself, meditat-

ing deeply upon those things which I had heard, and upon the nature of this Island, which, though in outward shew it appeareth much like other lands, yet must surely carry within it some foul hidden Blot or natural Poison, which has drawn upon it the just wrath of Heaven, so that all things that are done for its good turneth to its ill.

For not alone now, but howsoever deep into the abyss of time we peer and penetrate it would seem to have ever been the same. For as the vexed Bermoothes are never still even in the calmest season, so this Land of Ireland has never known peace, neither under the rule of its own chiefs, nor yet under the rule of those governors who came over to it from England. And in all truth and simple gravity it seems to me that unless through the justice and interposition of Heaven it could be speedily sea-swallowed, and engulphed in those waves which eternally rage against it, and thereby converted into a harmless Salt-pool, tenanted with fish in place of men, I much misdoubt it ever will!

VI

UPON the 12th of May his Excellency advanced to the assault of a castle held by one James Fitz-Pierce, of the family of the Geraldines, and passed his forces over the river Barrow.

Here the vanguard advanced upon that portion of the town of Athy which lies to the South bank of the river, while the main body forded the same almost a mile below, so as to be able to attack the castle on both sides at once. His Lordship the better to direct the movement of the forces, remaining meanwhile himself upon the bank of the river, and we of his immediate attendance remaining with him.

While we were still standing there, Lo! a great company both of horse and foot was seen to approach along the banks of the river. And in front of the troop rode that noble Lord the Earl of Ormonde, who had newly come out from Kilkenny to join his forces to those of his Excellency. With him were about 700 foot, and 200 Irish

horse, for the most part very ill caparisoned, likewise two Lords, the Viscount Mountgarret and the Lord Cahir, both of them Butlers, who had previously joined themselves to the rebels, the Viscount Mountgarret being even married to the daughter of the Capital Rebel and Traitor Tyrone, and of closest and most intimate council with him.

Then his Excellency the Lord Lieutenant, after he had advanced a few steps, greeted the Earl of Ormonde with all courtesy, but looked darkly at the other two Lords; who on their side hung back somewhat, while the Earl spake for them in a low voice, interceding with his Lordship to receive them into favour, they, he said, repenting greatly of those treasons by them aforetime committed.

As he spoke the two Earls stood together, horse by horse, upon the bank of the river. But his Excellency—being anxious for the right assault of the castle—gave after awhile scant heed to the discourse of the other Earl, which he perceiving, grew dark with wrath even to the chin, he being of a swarthy and choleric complexion, and little understanding that anyone could heed ought but his own discourse; holding himself, as he did,

after the Queen and he that was appointed her Lieutenant, the chief in this land of Ireland.

So—looking darkly at the castle—"Methinks my Lord of Essex" quoth he "the rebel James Fitz-Pierce is minded to hold his castle stoutly in your Lordship's despite! Perchance 'tis better, that so no excuse may remain for sparing him, as hath oft been done before to the no small loss of her Majesty. And I trust, when your Lordship shall have taken the castle, that you will make an example of him, and command his head to be set upon his own gateway, and his garrison given to the sword; for all this breed of Geraldines are a pernicious and pestilent race, and there will be no peace in the land till they are rooted out, as their kindred the Desmonds have already been."

At which his Lordship—looking with a stately port at the lords of Cahir and Mountgarret—

"By my faith my Lord of Ormonde," quoth he; "it were well there were no others beside Geraldines that were rebels! Methinks such words seem strange in your Lordship's mouth, who did but now intercede for two of your own name, who, if fame belie them not, are as notable rebels as any that this land hath recently bred."

Then those two Lords, overhearing or suspecting what was said, endeavoured to make excuses; saying that it was necessity that had compelled them, and that all Ireland, saving the towns of Kilkenny and Dublin, had submitted to Tyrone, and they but did like the rest. But my Lord would not hearken to them, and, calling aloud for the Provost Marshal, desired him to take them into his keeping, till such times as he was at leisure to decide what steps to take in their matters.

But James Fitz-Pierce—seeing that the passage of the river was effected, and his castle so encompassed that it were sure to be taken—presently delivered both it and himself into the Queen's hands, praying only for life, which the Lord Lieutenant granted, (though little deserving was he of the same), and having put in a garrison to hold the castle, he entered Athy, and there abode two nights to allow of the provisions and ammunition to come up.

So soon as the victuals had come my Lord commanded that there should be given to each man four days' provisions, to be carried upon his back, so that no further danger of scarcity could befal them, and this done we made all haste towards the

fort of Maryborow[1] in the Queen's County, with intent to relieve the English garrison there which was sore pressed and like to have been forced to yield. When we entered the passage of the Barrow, which is called Blackford, a party of the rebels, being chiefly of the sept of the O'Moores, were gathered together upon the further bank as if to dispute the passage, numbering perhaps 200 horsemen and twice as many foot. These being the first rebels I had seen in the open I felt at sight of them no small curiosity. There were gathered together in a great cluster, the horsemen wearing head pieces, and jerkins or jacks, and all carrying spears in their hands, which shone in the sun. Nevertheless their arms and legs were for the most part bare, and they used neither stirrups nor saddles, but only pads or cushions; a barbarous and unhandsome mode of riding which still prevaileth in Ireland, despite many enactments to the contrary.

When our avaunt-guard had passed through the water and had come out upon the other side, we fully expected that the rebels would have attacked them. This they did not do however, but galloped away; whereat we rejoiced not a little, seeing that

[1] Maryborough.

they dared not confront us, and so made all haste to Maryborow.

Now when we were still two or three English miles distant we saw the fort rising above the level country, having no flag displayed, nor any sight of soldier or other living thing, so that we greatly feared it had already fallen. But, when we had got within quarter of a mile, I, looking closely, perceived the figure of a man upon the battlements; who walked, not like one who expected succour, but with his head bent upon his breast, and seemingly in great despondency of soul. He, suddenly lifting his head, looked across the plain, and beheld our army marching towards him, and barely now ten pistol-shots away. At which sight he stood staring, like one in a dream, not knowing whether that which he looked at was real or not. Which, I telling my Lord, he commanded trumpets to be blown, and the rear-guard to advance, which was done with all speed. And, we coming to the fort, the gates were flung widely open, and great rejoicings made of all the garrison therein, they having of late looked for naught but a speedy and a most bloody Death.

VII

HAVING plentifully re-victualled the fort and strengthened the garrison, next day the army marched away, and, proceeding by Ballyknockan, reached the edge of a great forest, where his Lordship halted, and with his chief officers ascended a small acclivity, so as to endeavour to ascertain where the rebels were posted, and in what strength they lay.

Through the midst of this forest, which now lay immediately before us, lay a passage or roadway cut clear; upon which roadway was no sign of life, neither of man nor beast, yet we knew for a certainty, from what our scouts had informed us, that the rebels were posted here in great force, only so concealed by the trees and brushwood that it was impossible for us to discern so much as the nose or the hoof of one of them.

The name of the said passage is the passage of Cashel, and the forest through which it is cut is

known to be one of the chief fastnesses of the rebels in these parts, and the one on which they chiefly rely. The passage itself is a part of the main road called the *Bohermore*, and is about ten going paces wide, the wood on either side thick, and the branches of the trees greatly overlapping the passage. Further to gall the army on its route, the rebels had plashed—so 'tis called—the woods upon either side, which plashing is done by means of the interlacing of boughs, winding them in and out of one another, and where they are naturally scanty, filling them in with fresh boughs cut from the trees, the lower part being made additionally strong with logs.

Knowing that the rebels lay there, and as we had heard in great force, it was held expedient for the army to move warily. Accordingly, orders were given to the musketeers to flank the pikes, and the archery to fall in with the wings of shot on either side, and all to proceed in due order, and not more than ten men abreast.

Perceiving in the looks of the men no great signs of spirit, his Excellency rode to and fro in front of the army, encouraging them with his voice, and urging them to show of what mettle they were, and by no means to be discouraged,

remembering of what proud nation and breeding they came; and that it were a disgrace for English soldiers to show disquiet before a set of half-naked Irish kernes and savages.

"What, Gentlemen!" cried he. "Shall it be said that you, many of whom took part in the late campaign in Spain, whereby our arms did win such glory, shall show less mettle upon so much smaller an occasion? By St George of England let it not be so reported of us!" At which words they raised a shout in reply, yet not so loud or valourous a shout as I have oft heard upon similar occasions.

Then the avaunt-guard, being ordered to advance through the passage, did so. But, seeing a clear space not far distant on the other side, and the forest itself being so dark and evilly menacing, (though as yet we had seen none of the foe) the soldiers advanced more and more rapidly, until a full half of them were through; whereupon the rest, perceiving this, pressed on more and more, so that the order in which they had set forth was not a little broken. Suddenly, with a great roaring noise, more like wild beasts than men, the rebels rushed from their concealment, climbing over, or creeping through the densest parts of the thicket, and

falling upon the soldiery like so many Devils new come out of Hell; which sudden assault so scared our men that they stood awhile trembling and astonished, not knowing what manner of foes they had to deal with. Then, the darts which the rebels rained upon them coming ever more and more fast, and many falling, they began to hasten on all together, so that a clear space was soon left in the middle of the forest. Whereupon the rear-guard, being thus cut off, appeared in its turn to be overcome with dismay; the rebels having got between it and those who had advanced into the open.

Seeing that they wavered, his Excellency, crying aloud "Follow me Gentlemen!" set spurs to his horse and galloped along the passage into the thickest of the enemy, cutting down right and left all that opposed themselves to him, whereat they rapidly gave way, feeling doubtless as if a God rather than a man were dealing Death amongst them, we following also and doing the like, each in his own measure, smiting, and slaying all who tarried to oppose us. Despite of all that we could do, his Lordship nevertheless still kept ahead, so that for awhile there was a clear space between him and us. Which reminded me of the first time

ever he witnessed swords crossed, having then but sixteen years of age, when he accompanied my Lord of Leicester, his step father, to Flushing in the Low Countries, a town of which Sir Philip Sidney was then governor. For he and the other young gallants of the army (Sir Philip Sidney himself foremost) were wild to cross swords with the Spaniards, and a fog coming on not far from the walls of Zutphen [a town which my Lord of Leicester desired to capture, and the Duke of Parma, then commanding the Spaniards, no less desired to relieve], we, being under Sir John Norris with 1500 horse, came unexpectedly upon a large body of Spaniards. And the night being so thick we at first knew them not, but no sooner did we do so than my Lord, plunging madly amongst them with his sword brandished, was lost from our sight. Whom we pursued, fully expecting to find him dead, so fierce was the charge and so recklessly had he adventured his life. Nevertheless by God's grace he escaped with little more than a sword-cut across the right arm, which disabled him for some days, but proved of no lasting injury; a mercy the more signal seeing that this very attack before Zutphen was rendered ever

memorable by the death of that illustrious soldier, poet, and glory of England, Sir Philip Sidney, who, having his thigh broken by a musket ball, died a few days later, to the inexpressible grief, not alone of his friends and countrymen, but of the whole World, and of all that esteemed him one of its Chief Ornaments.

But to return to these our Leinster rebels, being so soundly dealt with they did not, I warrant, long await more such hearty payment, but retreated with all haste to the forest, taking refuge there, like four-footed beasts of the field, which know their own hiding places, to which hiding places it is scarce possible for Christian men, unless aided by blood-hounds, to pursue them. From beginning to end the whole engagement lasted as nearly as I could calculate not more than some sixteen or seventeen minutes.

Next to the Lord Lieutenant there was no one that bore himself that day better than young Frank Gardner. For when the first great rush was made by the rebels he was at some distance. Nevertheless, seeing his Lordship start, he set spurs to his horse, and, forcing it to gallop at its utmost speed, almost succeeded in attaining him, and was throughout the nearest that followed

him. Then for the space of some three to five minutes, there was great confusion, swords flashing, darts flying, so that I wist not myself very clearly what was happening, nor could distinguish friends from foes. But when this first confusion had a little abated I saw Frank Gardner setting his horse at that great wattled fence or plashing which hemmed the roadway in on either side, and, having forced it to leap over, he set upon the rebels, who had now mostly got to that side, his sword flashing over his head like some young St Michael in a Church window. Then for awhile I again lost sight of him, being somewhat hotly assailed myself, when all of a sudden Sir Conyers Clifford passed me at the gallop, his sword streaming with blood to the very hilt, and —"See to thy young springal" cried he, pointing to the wood, "or of a surety he will be slain."

Then I looked, and on the other side of the plashing saw Frank beset with two half-naked rascals, wearing thick leather doublets, and seemingly naught else, but of so dour and sinewy an aspect that they scarce seemed to need armour. Who, having Frank at a disadvantage, the wood being so thick that it was impossible for him properly to exercise his horse, were like to pull

him from the saddle. Seeing this I forced my horse in its turn to leap the fence, and coming to his rescue we together assailed those two naked rascals, who, being taken on either side, presently yielded up their lives, their bodies between us being served with at least a dozen sword-cuts apiece. Which—though a pleasant enough entertainment at the time, we both escaping from the adventure without a scratch—it breaketh my heart now to recall, remembering how that day, so fairly entered upon, ended.

For after the combat was over, Frank and I were riding together along the edge of the forest; and the boy was filled with pride and gladness, because of the good fight, and because he had acquitted himself well under the very eye of his Excellency. "'Tis the only life!" cried he "The only life! and all other but a mere phantom image thereof! And for my part I would gladly give up every acre of land, till I had left myself no more than would fit into a lark's cage, rather than be kept mewed on the same, as my mother would have me to be! Marry, that would I, though I had to trail a pike for it with the meanest soldier in the army!"

"Be not too sure, or too glad for all that

Master Frank!" said I "for he that fighteth, the day will surely come when he too will be slain, and eat the dust, as did yonder sturdy rogues late slain by us; yea though he were as strong as Hercules, or as brave as Sir Hector of Troy, so that it may be, not Life but Death, that thou so clamourest for, and desirest to have."

With that he laughed aloud in the pride of his heart, standing erect in his stirrups, and waving his arms; his hair shining like ripe corn along the edges of his beaver. "And if it *be* Death" cried he "I had liefer die fighting the Queen's enemies than at home in a bed with the quilt up to my chin! Only, being so young, I do hope to have a good many years yet, and a fair stomach-full of fighting, or ever I come to my end."

At that moment, and even while he yet spake, there came a great shower of darts from an ambuscade wherein certain of the rebels had lain treacherously hid. Most of which fell wide of us, so that at first I thought no harm done. All at once, looking round, I saw Frank Gardner reel in his saddle, and his two hands scrabbling in the air, as though he were trying to seize something, and with that suddenly he fell, and his horse, being affrighted at such a sudden falling, started, and its

rider's foot getting entangled in the stirrup, he was dragged after it over the grass many perches distance.

Whereat, wild with fear, I flung myself suddenly from my own horse, and, rushing up to his, caught it by the bridle, and so stopped it. But when I had got the lad clear of it he lay like an image of wood without life or movement. Seeing therefore a soldier pass, I despatched him swiftly for some water, which, when it came, I threw over Frank's head, whereupon he sighed and opened his eyes and—"Tell my Lord—" said he, and struggled to utter somewhat, only the words came not. Then he lay a while, the blood flowing swiftly from a wound which was in his side, and again he muttered something, but all sounded hollow and confused, and like words said brokenly in a dream.

Then, having called for aid, we bore him swiftly back to the camp, and laid him upon a bed. But when the doctor had come, and had examined his hurts, he shook his head, saying that one of them was in a very vital part, and that save for some solace, there was little to do. Nevertheless that night he regained his consciousness, and seemed to be in a fair way, speaking clearly, and strongly,

and with a good courage, and telling me not to be disquieted, for that he would shortly be as well as ever.

Next day, the army having to proceed, we laid him upon a litter made of sticks, which was borne by 4 soldiers, the same offering their services very willingly, his gallant conduct the day before having been so loudly bruited throughout the whole army. And at first he talked gaily, yet after awhile suffered greatly from the roughness of the ways, so that towards afternoon he grew light-headed either from the pain of his wounds or from the fever which they engendered, and, though he talked and muttered continually, there was little that I, although the nearest to him, could understand.

When night came, there being no beds to be procured, we laid him upon an heap of cloaks in a small tent which my Lord commanded to be set for him some little way from the noise of the army. Here he lay, at first quietly, as if asleep, I sitting beside him, and no one else near. Presently, hearing the sound of a bugle for the collecting of the men that had strayed, he began first to mutter, and then to sing some scraps of song, which he had doubtless caught from the soldiers—"Hark! Hark!" said he—then, after a pause,

"Hark! Hark! the pipes and drums!
Rat tat tat tat! the soldier comes!"

Then for a space he lay quiet again, and after that began another stave, or perchance a fragment of the same,—

"Over the rough, over the smooth;
Over the rocks and gravel!
Over the living, over the slain;
On the soldiers travel!
Rat tat tat tat, and Rub a dub dub!"

And with his poor hands, which had already grown so weak, he beat upon the cloak which covered him, as if he were playing upon a drum or tambourine, such as soldiers use when they are a marching.

Then—my heart being torn to see him so gone from himself, and no longer knowing or heeding me—I was moved (perhaps foolishly) to endeavour to attract his attention. Yet could I in no wise succeed in winning him to know me, for his eyes stared constantly out through the opening of the tent into the forest beyond, so that it seemed as if he were watching the birds—small finches, throstles, and the like—which were going to roost with some little noise and twittering among the

branches. Presently he began to talk again in a quick muttering voice, yet withal clearly, calling upon sundry, whom by their names I knew to be servants, either of himself or of his mother; and especially upon one Ben Brace, who was his chief henchman, and had been with him since his birth, and had taught him all he knew of falconry and such like.

"Ho! uncouple me the dogs, Ben!" cried he. "Not Dewlap, for he ever overruns the game, but Spring, and Harkaway, and old Silvervoice, who is the trustiest brach of the pack."

Then it seemed that he held himself to be hare-hunting or stag-hunting, for he began to holloa, though with a voice so weak that it went to my very heart to hear him.

"La! La! Yellowface! In for him then, old wench. In my pretties! There he goes! there he goes! Hist, hist! for'rard, for'rard!"

Again he grew silent awhile, but ever more and more restless, tossing himself to and fro on the bed and flinging aside the cloaks and other weeds which I had laid on him. Yet still his talk ran of dogs and of hunting, so that it was plain he held himself to be at home in Somersetshire, and once he put out his hand as if to pat some favourite

which pressed against him. And—"Care her well for me while I am in Ireland—" I heard him say softly, as if to some one near him.

Suddenly his mood changed again and looking down at his vesture with an air of displeasure,—

"How now rascals!" cried he "How came this spot upon my doublet? Know you not that I go to the wars with my Lord the Earl of Essex? Is it fitting that one who is a soldier and a full grown man, and goes to the Irish wars, should have a doublet so besmirched and spoiled? Nay his Lordship will mock me, and so will the other lords and knights who bear us company, and thus I shall be shamed and discredited, and all for your neglect!"

Even as he thus spake however, seemingly in anger, his voice grew weaker, and weaker, till I could scarce hear it at all. And—"Oh Hal I am so weary!" said he, yet rather as though he spoke to me in some past time than at the present.

The air that night was extraordinarily still, so that there was scarce any sound to be heard save a sort of humming movement from the army, and the cries of the sentries as they changed guard. And several times in the early part of the night one or another would come to the door of the tent,

and enquire how the lad fared, for so short a time as he had been amongst them he had greatly won the love of all that knew him. As the night wore on these nevertheless ceased from coming, until at length it seemed that he and I were left alone in a great and solemn vacancy. And whether he was soothed by this silence, or whether 'twere through weakness and the fast coming presence of Death, I know not, but his words, which had hitherto come rapidly, ceased wholly, and he lay back upon the couch, and, save that he moaned from time to time, there was little sign of life. Then—this state continuing for a long time, and finding that the moaning also had ceased — I leaned over him, fearing lest his soul had already sped, indeed it seemed to me that his breath came not, and his countenance was white and set like marble, so that it appeared many years older than before. Yet was it a noble and steadfast countenance, seeming to prefigure that man he might have been, had he in God's grace lived to be a man, and grown beyond his nonage.

While I still stood there, leaning over him, it happened that there came a rushing noise of wind without, so that the leaves in the forest were ruffled, and brushed one against another, making a soft

noise like the sound of a woman's dress creeping cautiously along the ground and coming nearer. At that sound Frank Gardner suddenly opened his eyes, and a smile broke over his face, such a smile as one sees upon the face of a little child which has cried itself to sleep, when it wakes suddenly in the night, and sees one whom it loves bending over it. And, half lifting his head, he turned his cheek round, as though expecting some one would lay a kiss upon it, (which indeed was fair and smooth still as a maiden's) and with a great sigh full of comfort and satisfaction—"Mother!" said he very tenderly, and with that word still upon his lips his spirit departed to God who made it.

And I, left there alone by his dead body, fell a weeping and a sobbing like a very woman, and could scarce believe that he was dead, who had seemed to me when alive to be more alive than all others. And "What? Oh what in God's name?" thought I to myself, "shall I say to that mother, upon whom he even now called with his last breath, and who doubtless prayeth night and day for his sweet life, little wotting that it is already split? and that he lies here, stark and dead, slain without ruth, honour, profit, or comfort by miserable

Irish savages, and that too in a skirmish so small and of little importance that men will scarce so much as enquire the very name thereof!"

Towards six of the morning there came one to me from his Excellency, enquiring how the lad fared. And when I returned word to him that he was already dead, my Lord came himself, as did other gentlemen, all grieving greatly for one who had seemed as it were a comely flower or Flag of Youth decking our sad and little joyous company. And many kindly words were said to me of all they that came, they knowing how greatly I cherished the lad, which words I in truth heeded little, being so embruted with my sorrow, as scarce to reckon what befel around me.

That day—the army being upon the road and the time very pressing—we were constrained to bury my dear lad even in that place where he died, and where we were then encamped; his Excellency sending two of his chaplains to perform the service, and many noble and worthy gentlemen voluntarily attending. For the place, I myself selected it the same morning; it being very green, fair and smooth, and hard by it there ran a small stream, which, slipping hastily over a short natural declivity, fell with some small noise and bubbling confusion

into a tuft or thicket of birch-trees underneath. And to the right and to the left of the grave itself grew two more young and very slender birch-trees, which I marked, so that I might the better know the place again. Yet were we afraid to erect headstone, or ought else over him, lest, when we had past on, the savages of the place might, for very despite and wickedness, tear up his dear corpse from its resting place.

Then, the grave being made, we laid him therein, (wrapt in a great furred cloak, which his mother Alas poor soul! had provided to keep him warm and dry on his Irish service) and, when all was over and done that could be done, I requested those who had borne me company that they would leave me there awhile alone, which they courteously did and retired. Whereupon—seating myself upon a mossy stone which rose out of the ground close to where the grave had been made, and looking towards it—"Oh my lad! my lad" cried I "Would to God my foolish tongue had rotted away within my mouth or ever I aided thee to come upon this fatal service, or would to God and better still, that I, for whom life at best is but a sorry pilgrimage, were lying there, rather than thou, to whom all things wert bright and fair, and

who wert thyself the very brightest thing that walked upon this sad earth's surface!" And in my grief and sore distraction of spirit I must, as it has since seemed to me, have grown somewhat light-headed, for assuredly from time to time I thought that I heard a voice calling to me, and a sound as of steps approaching lightly and blithely across the forest. Yet was there no one there, and no voice whatsoever, only the foolish blubbering of that little stream, which kept leaping, and running, and babbling over its stones, now and then stopping altogether it seemed for a while, then suddenly breaking out anew with a noise like a sob, and hurrying through the reeds and rank herbage which covered that place till it fell over the small declivity, and vanished into the little birchen thicket springing so green and so lush at the bottom.

VIII

HAVING promised the Earl of Ormonde to visit him in his castle of Kilkenny, his Excellency was constrained next day to leave the army, and taking with him a small body of horse, rode thither, I accompanying him with some few others of his household.

Now, for all that there was no great love between his Excellency and the Earl of Ormonde, that nobleman carried it, I must admit, very handsomely, and made great show of welcome to his town and castle, not only to his Lordship himself, but also to all that bore him company. For there was not a man in that town of Kilkenny but was commanded to stand before his house door and bow himself low to the ground as we passed, nor a woman, nor yet a child, even to the smallest, but they must stand at windows, or upon housetops, and wave kerchiefs, or rags of some sort as they could procure them. For the Earl of Ormonde is in very truth, and in no mere fashion

of words, the Lord of his vassals, so that there is not one in that town of Kilkenny, no nor in the whole Palatinate (so they call the region over which he rules, and of which he is Lord Palatine) that durst so much as call his very soul his own, and not rather first his Lord's. Yea even up to his own near kindred there was not man or woman, as I speedily found, but trembled before him, fearing him in a fashion which to our English notions seems but slavish, and scarce fitting towards any person save God himself, or that Sovereign who is appointed as His direct and visible Vice-regent.

With regard to the town and castle of Kilkenny I can tell little as to their make and semblance, having in truth noticed little, my eyes and heart being so bound and blinded with sorrow, thinking of my poor lad whom I had left behind me, lying so still in his mossy grave, with that foolish stream babbling ever beside him.

For as we were coming into the town, and the trumpets sounded, and the people shouted, and women waved kerchiefs, I thought to myself "Ah how Frank would have laughed with glee and how his eyes would have danced as he rode along!" And when the castle was entered and many

gentlemen bravely attired came forward to greet us, the thought came to me, "Alas! my Frank was a braver and a more gallant gentleman than any of you!" And when we were set down to the banquet, which was shortly spread before us, and I saw the great spread of viands, and shew of wine cups, then I thought "Ah Frank, you too would have enjoyed this good cheer!" for he was ever a valiant trencher-man was Frank, and as ready with his knife as with his sword, or his purse either, for all who needed the same. And these thoughts bred in me such a continual sorrow, that with difficulty could I refrain from tears, and my breath came in great windy sighs, so that I could scarce attempt to set to at the food, but was forced to leave my knife and fork lying idle upon the board beside me.

But the lady who had been assigned me to lead to the banquet, (by name as I afterwards learned Mistress Alicia Butler, a comely gentlewoman, though no longer in her May time) seeing me thus overcome, and like to be choked, took pity upon me, and enquired what this trouble was that so miserably oppressed me. Whereupon I was moved to tell her about my dear lad, and of his loss which so weighed me down that I

could scarce speak, or indeed properly think or breathe.

To all which she listened kindly, with many tender "Ahs!" and "Ohs!" and "Well a days!" such as women use when they are moved to pity. And having told it to her I felt somewhat less burdened, for a trouble which is told weigheth less upon the soul, especially when it is shared with one that is of a ministering spirit, and in whose eyes no less than upon their lips may be read a true and lively compassion.

Finding her so kindly disposed I unfolded myself to her more and more freely, telling her of all that was in my mind, and chiefly of the great trouble and difficulty that beset me in what manner to make known this his cruel grievous death unto my dear lad's mother, who, poor soul, being so wrapt up in his sweet life, and having nought else in this world to cling to, would for a surety fall away and die too if she were told it abruptly, or by one who knew not how to break it to her with discretion.

Then Mistress Butler, having listened to me to the end, sat silent, and, I being about to speak again, she held up her finger, as one who would say "Hush!" and it was plain to me that she was

thinking earnestly of what were best to do. So I waited, for that sex—when, departing from its usual custom, it doth think at all—can often I have before now found do so with as much purposefulness as we ourselves. Nay it sometimes happens that their minds, being doubtless less cumbered with large and weighty matters, do bring forth thoughts that our solider ones had perchance scarce lighted on.

So it proved now; for, turning to me, she said "Hath not the poor lady any friend, one who is of like age to herself, and to whom hath also befallen some such sorrow as this you tell me of?"

"Truly she has" I said "there is just such an one—Mistress Goldsworthy by name—who being a long time a widow, did lately lose both her sons in the wars of the Low Countries."

"Write to her then" said Mistress Butler "and say that you expect her of her love and friendship to go to this poor lady, and herself to break and expound the matter to her."

"But," objected I, "Mistress Goldsworthy, of whom I speak, hath her abode in the county of Sussex not far from the town of Lewes, which is at the least not less than two days' journey on

horse-back from the dwelling place of poor Mistress Gardner."

"Never heed for that, but write to her!" said the lady "and I will be your surety that no sooner will she have received your letter, and understood what the matter is, than she will straightway prepare herself for the journey, were it ten times the distance. For the heart of one mother that hath been in trouble cleaveth unto another that is in the like plight, even as you may see two drops of water in a fountain cleave and cling one unto the other."

Then I thanked her, promising to do even as she had advised me, and to write without fail to Mistress Goldsworthy, sending the letter by a sure messenger. "As for myself" said I "I shall never dare to present myself again before my Frank's mother, seeing that the sight of me would be to her as ratsbane, or like a fresh wound in her poor heart, knowing that but for my foolish encouragement he had never come to Ireland, but would at this moment be safe and whole beside her."

"Well" said Mistress Butler, "seeing that I know not the lady I cannot reply to you positively upon that score. Nevertheless it seems to me that, she being, as you say, a noble and God-fearing

matron, she will bear no such prolonged malice against you, but will regard you as but an ignorant and unwotting instrument in the hands of Him who knoweth what is best for us all. For you must know Sir, that it is in the endurance of such woes as these that the strength and courage of we women is mainly shewn. For both by nature, and circumstances we are oft forced to bear, aye and seemingly to bear willingly, the presence of those who have wrought us some deadly injury; and that too not alone where the said injury hath been done accidentally and unwittingly as in your case, but also not unseldom where it hath been done with full knowledge, intention and understanding of the same."

With these words she looked, as if constrained to do so, across the hall to where at the head of the table sat my Lord of Ormonde, with his Excellency on his right-hand, and other knights and gallant noblemen around, he being very stately in apparel, and erect in port, despite his great age, yet with a dark, dour, and menacing look upon his face, so that all who met his gaze seemed to quake before the same.

I, seeing her so look, fell in my turn to pitying her, inwardly suspecting that this bread

of which she then eat must at times be but a bitter crust between her teeth, and that to live under the gaze, and to submit to the harsh and sour authority of my Lord of Ormonde (*Black Tom*, as of those that like him not he is most commonly called) must to many of his kindred be a sad and sorry service. And, so thinking, there came into my mind a tale which I had heard in Dublin, but at the time heeded little; how two years since one Pierce Butler had, for some offence given the State, been brought alive into this very castle of Kilkenny, and that the Earl his uncle, had then and there, upon his own sole and absolute authority, caused him to be beheaded, and his head sent—not with any special insignia or marks of honour, such as might in the circumstances have seemed fitting—but as I was told in a common hempen bag as a present to the Lord Deputy.

"Truly, and by the Pity of God!" thought I "supposing the said Pierce Butler to have stood in some close relation to this poor lady, either as brother, husband, son, or even as near and dear kinsman, and that she—all helpless as her sex naturally are—was constrained, not merely to see him done to the death without ruth or hesitation, but afterwards to eat of the bread and drink of

the cup of him that did the same, that were a woe compared to which the worst that could befal a man like myself were light and easy to bear! And this thought was at once both a disturbance and yet a consolation to me. For we mortals are so made that often the best unguent we can lay to our own wound is to be the witness of some still greater and more grievous wound that has to be borne by Another.

That night, as his Excellency was retiring to rest, there came to him a gentleman from Sir Edward Butler, the Earl of Ormonde's next brother, desiring to know if it would please him to hunt the wolf with him next day. Which, he replying that he would gladly do so, the gentleman said that in that case Sir Edward would wait upon his Excellency very early in the morning before the sun was up, when, the wolves, not having yet retired to covert, would more certainly show good sport.

My Lord, who ever sleepeth lightly, was up by three of the clock, blithe as a boy, despite his many pains, at the thought of the sport before him. For my part, I was little inclined that way, being still so sore of heart by reason of the trouble that

had recently overtaken me; nevertheless at his desire I rode forth with the rest, his Excellency and Sir Edward Butler going first with the hounds and hunters, we that were of his company following in the rear.

The wood, like most of these Irish woods I have seen, was very large and the coppices thick, so that it was not a little difficult to hinder oneself from being severed from the rest, and I, riding somewhat carelessly, was soon separated from his Excellency, and, looking round after a while, found myself alone, saving only a kerne of the Butlers, that had been desired to run by my side. For these Irish kernes will keep up with any horse, especially in such close and tangled coppices, where a horseman must needs go softly, lest he fall unaware into some unseen peril.

The light being still dim I paused, expecting some indication that would guide me; and, hearing presently a sound as of a horn, I rode on again, but after a while came to a place where many paths forked, and so was brought to a standstill, not knowing what to do, or whither to go.

With that I made signs to the kerne to go first and show me the way, whereupon, knowing some words of English, he replied [whether truly of

not] that he himself knew little of the windings of this wood. Accordingly I rode forward again, but slowly, fearing to fall upon some device of the rebels, who I knew thickly beset all this part of the country, coming often in their insolence close to the very walls of Kilkenny, to the no small alarm and disquietude of its citizens.

After about half an hour the sun began to rise, yet could by no means penetrate to where we were, the trees and bushes around being so solid. Yet was there a sweet scent of foliage, and the birds too were beginning to sing blithely in the greenwood, so that the whole world seemed glad and of good courage, as of a morning it often does, let what will have happed at eventide.

We had not gone more than a mile before we heard a sound as of singing, which at first I wondered at, asking myself whether it could be Magical, it seeming to proceed less from a level with ourselves than to be rising up out of the ground below. Nor was it like any singing I had ever heard before, being a strange and gentle cadence, sad and at the same time cheerful, such as rustical folks pretend the fairy or elfin music to be.

Seeing that I paused to listen to it, that kerne

of the Butlers made signs to me to tarry where I was, and straightway began to wind and writhe his body through the woods, more like a serpent moving upon its belly than a Christian man. And when he had gone a little way he looked back, making signals that I should advance. So, having dismounted and fastened my horse to a tree, I too moved forward in the same manner, or as near it as I could compass, and came to the place where he stood.

There was a steep pitched bank below us, the ground yawning suddenly away leaving a deep pit or hollow place. In shape it was for all manner of speaking like a Wassail Bowl, such as men send round at yule time, when young and old meet together, and much laughter and merriment is afoot; the breadth of it some eighty going paces wide, and the depth perhaps twice as much; the sides very steep, and clothed in brushwood and low timber, save in one place where a great fir tree, having its roots set not far from the bottom, lifted its upper boughs in great tiers one over the other to the very top.

When first my eyes lit upon that bowl I wondered greatly, not knowing if it might have been dug by Enchantment, for it seemed unlikely

that the untaught and savage people of the country would have had knowledge and civility enough to dig so great a pit, which would indeed have needed many skilled artificers to open up. Since that time I have learned that such bowls are common in this country, and that they are due to no artifice of man, but to the natural falling away of the soil through the entry of water, which water, lying there, dissolves the ground, and afterwards escaping through holes at the bottom, leaves the pit empty.

At the further end of the pit was a small thicket, somewhat closer than the rest, and, by stooping a little, I could see a sort of pent-roof of bushes, welded together in the fashion of a bird's nest, from which nest or thicket proceeded that sound of singing we had heard. So, making signs to the Butler kerne to make no noise, I waited awhile, wondering to myself who it could be that would inhabit such a place.

Presently there came a stirring about of the boughs, and a woman stepped out from under the roof, bearing a young child in her arms, which she, sitting down upon the bank, began to dance and dandle on her knee, as mothers do, singing to it the while that strange and savage song which we

had heard. Whereat the creature laughed, and crowed, and kicked lustily with its legs, which were bare, as was its whole body, save for some sorry rags wound around its middle. Yet it seemed a fair child, of a good ruddy colour and well liking, such as I wot many a childless Dame of high degree would gladly have called by her Lord's name.

It being still so early, scarce six of the clock, the woman doubtless fancied herself alone, and so sang to her babe, which—savage and far distant from civility as she was—she doubtless loved in her fashion no less than they that are of a higher breeding. Her head being turned from me I could not see her face, but her hair was dark and very long, hanging down in loose quantities over her shoulders.

For what cause I know not, save that my heart was perhaps softened and made foolish by sorrow, but the song of that savage woman as she sat with her babe upon her knee, little wotting that any eyes beheld her, went to my heart as few strains have ever done, and I could not but think, as I had done the night before, of the hard lot of those who, without fault of their own, are set in the midst of cruel warfare, and beset with many

pangs and perils, which they, being weak and helpless, can by no means hinder or avert.

Of this truth I at that moment had a most lively example, for, hearing by good hap a sound as of a cord strained under the finger, I looked round suddenly, and saw that the kerne of the Butlers had set an arrow in his bow, and was taking aim at the mother and her child as they sat there in the hollow, suspecting nothing.

Then—being filled with wrath at this sight—I turned upon him swiftly, and, seizing him by the throat, caused him to drop the bolt.

"Cur! Caitiff! Cruel villain!" cried I furiously. "Would you slay those that are doing no harm, and by their youth and helplessness seem to cry aloud as with tongues for pity and mercy?"

Whereat all astonished, as one that looked not for such treatment, he replied, as far as I could understand his language, that the woman was of the party of certain rebels, who often hid their women and children in such places, and that it would greatly pleasure Sir Edward Butler to know that they had been slain.

"Rebel me no rebels, rascal!" quoth I. "They are women and infants, and are doing no harm to mortal man. An' if I catch you, Master Kerne,

playing such devil's trick, beshrew me but I will chop that body of yours into small pieces with my sword or ever your fingers can reach again to your bowstring."

At that speech of mine he began to writhe to and fro without speaking, doubling himself the while as if suddenly took with the colic. Then, all at once, and before I wist what he was going to do, he slipt from my hands, and shot away, supple as an eel, and fled through the trees, leaving me there alone.

So, being left to myself, cut off from his Excellency and the rest, and in a barbarous and savage country, I was at first in a sore strait what to do. Nevertheless, returning to where I left my horse, and taking it by the bridle I advanced with such speed as I could make, the way being very thick, and all overgrown with briers. There was no path, nor any sign that there ever had been one, nor was there ought to see or hear, saving only the birds, which that day were singing like mad things in the branches, and once I spied a grey wolf stealing past under the covert, which glared at me with glassy eyes, and so vanished again.

Presently I came to a place which was more

open, the grass and moist weeds shining like jewels new set by some lapidary, and a small stream of water running swiftly by in the sunlight. There was a bank here, overgrown with whins and prickly gorze, and the ground below it blue as Heaven with a small belled flower—the name of which I could not recal, though methought the face of it seemed familiar and kindly.

Upon this bank I sat down to rest, wondering within myself what I should do. And, as I so sat, there presently came to my ear the sound of whistling, like the whistling of a bird, which nevertheless was not a bird's voice, though clear and shrill as one. So I waited, thinking that he who whistled so loudly must needs be in good case, and perchance might be one of a company that could guide me back to Kilkenny. And as I waited, lo! there came through the trees a boy some 10 or 11 years of age, having scarce a rag to cover his nakedness, only a sort of short red kirtle like a woman's round his waist, and a wisp of straw or hay about his shoulders, and the rest of him naked as the day on which he was born. Then, still making no sound, I was filled with amazement at the good content of one that was in such evil plight, for his face was thin and starved

as if with hunger, yet he laughed and leaped in the middle of the space, all for pure glee, whistling like a mavis the while.

So I sat, staring at him. Then, moving suddenly, I called to him to ask the way. But, when he caught sight of me and of the horse, he too stood for a moment, staring like one that had seen an evil spirit, and the next he scampered away like a coney under roots and between boughs, diving as it were headlong through the midst of the wood, so that I speedily lost sight of him.

After that I wandered about for some hours, sore spent and beset with hunger, not having as yet broken my fast that day, and it was not until two of the clock that by the mercy of God I again heard a sound of hounds baying, and shortly afterwards fell in with my Lord and the rest of his following returning home from the wolf hunting.

Upon the way back to Kilkenny the talk ran of wolves, and of those that shewed the best sport, as the large grey wolf, and also of the smaller dun one, which two it would seem are the sorts that chiefly prevail in this country. And, this finished, the talk branched to hawking, and the divers varieties of hawks, of which my Lord Ormonde and Sir Edward Butler have it seems great store;

and which made the swiftest flight, and which could strike surest, and which lie longest upon the wing.

To all this I for my part gave but little heed, my mind and ears seeming to myself to be still full of the song of that savage woman I had listened to awhile before. And all that evening many strange thoughts bore me company, nay even at night-time and in my sleep they beset me, I being much burdened by the thought of Mistress Gardner; with whose image I in dreams confounded that of Mistress Butler, by whose side I again sat that evening, while with the images of both these gentlewoman there mingled, [as even in my sleep I was aware somewhat improperly !] the image of that savage woman sitting with her baby upon her knee, and singing so solitarily in the woodland.

IX

HAVING taken a courteous leave of the ladies, and thanked the Earl of Ormonde for his good cheer, upon the 21st of May his Excellency left Kilkenny and joined the camp, and next day marched with the army towards Munster, and lodged in a small village called Clanbroghan, and upon the twenty-third came to Clonmel, which is upon the river Suir, where the army rested both to refresh itself, and to await the coming of cannon and munition from Waterford.

At a distance of about five miles from that town of Clonmel, in the midst of this river Suir, stands an island or natural rock, and upon this island a castle, which castle is so strong both by nature and art that it is believed by all Ireland to be impregnable. Its name is the castle of Cahir, and it is the chief house of Thomas Butler, Lord of Cahir, and a place of greater consequence than any other in this part of Munster, being both a

passage upon the river, and also near to the White Knight's country, and to that of the Burkes, called Clanwilliam and Muskerry.

This Thomas Butler Lord of Cahir was at that time with the army, and had promised to yield his castle so soon as ever his Excellency drew near, it being then held by James Butler his younger brother. At Clonmel however high words passed between the two lords, his Excellency suspecting the lord Cahir of having privily admitted strangers into his castle, in order to make a party for the White Knight, and to hinder its deliverance. This the other denied with oaths, swearing that none were in it but his own kindred only, and further that it should for a certainty be delivered over upon the very next day, and that he himself would engage to go and see that it was so done.

His Excellency agreeing to this, next day sent him and Sir Henry Danvers to draw forth his brother and the ward, and to admit the garrison appointed, telling the said Sir Henry to watch closely what befel. But when these two, Lord Cahir and Sir Henry Danvers, drew near to hold a parley, James Butler refused to surrender the castle, swearing that he would not give up so much as a

stone of it, and bitterly reviling his brother with many furious words, not alone in the English language, but in the Irish also.

When his Excellency saw them returning, and the soldiers too that had been sent with them to garrison the castle, and learnt that it was not to be yielded up, he fell into great wrath, and called quickly together a Council, namely the Earl of Ormonde, the Marshall, Sir George Bouchier, Sir Warham St Leger, and the Sergeant Major, to consider what means were at hand to force the place.

These being found to be very scant he sent for more munitions to Waterford, and also to all the towns round about for victuals for the army. And this done he called again before him the Lord Cahir, saying first to those around—"Now look you well my Lords and Gentlemen, and mark when I shall challenge this traitor what answer he makes, and if he seem to palter; for I am firmly persuaded that he is in concert with his brother, and that they two do but play with us; the one out yonder in open defiance upon his rock, the other here secretly within our own camp."

Then, when the Lord Cahir had come in, the Viscount Mountgarret who is his brother-in-law

also following him, his Excellency challenged him loudly, saying,

"How now! How now, my lord of Cahir, for you must answer for yourself! How comes it that this castle of yours stands at defiance against her Majesty, seeing that you its lord are here in our midst, and do profess obedience?"

Then at the first the Lord Cahir seemed not to know how to answer; presently, plucking up a little courage, "Verily, my lord, and as I am a Christian man, the fault is none of mine" said he earnestly "seeing that I besought my brother to yield up the castle, as Sir Henry Danvers here present who was with me can testify, and can tell you how I was myself assailed with many insolent and disgraceful words of those that came out to parley."

"That is true" said Sir Henry Danvers, "fouler language did I never hear by one brother to another, and I can testify that the Lord Cahir here present did in words beseech his brother to yield up the castle quietly into your Excellency's hands."

"Aye" said the Viscount Mountgarret "for I too was there and heard the words he said."

With that his Excellency's anger broke suddenly out and—"Words! Words! Words! What

are words?" cried he, rapping upon the board with his two hands, "I tell you 'tis not words but deeds that must answer this matter. Here stand I, and all her Majesty's army, being kept at defiance and delayed upon our southern journey by this proud rebel, and there stands my lord of Cahir, who did vow and swear, not once but many times, that so soon as we approached the castle it should be yielded peaceably. Did you so swear, my lord of Cahir, or did you not?"

"Truly my lord" answered the other "I did, but——"

"No *buts* sir! no *buts!*" cried his Excellency loudly. "I want neither *buts* nor *ifs*, nor any other words, but plain dealing and loyalty. And this I tell you my lord of Cahir, that though you and all Ireland believe this castle of yours to be impregnable, yet here I stand, and from this spot I stir not till I have reduced it, though it took me a year to do it, aye and the loss of every second man in my army. And so you may tell your brother, and every other fellow traitor of yours under yonder walls."

"Fellow traitors my Lord!" said the lord Cahir tremblingly. "I hope your Excellency does not reckon me with traitors?"

"Marry do I," answered his Excellency roundly.

With that the Earl of Ormonde and the Viscount Mountgarret would have interposed, praying his Excellency to send once again to the castle to parley, and not to judge the lord Cahir upon a single failure. While others of the Council said nay but such conduct was clearly traitorous, and no otherwise; and others said first one thing and then another, so that for a time there was great confusion, and no man could hear what any other said, for they all spake together. But his Excellency turned angrily from them all, and would listen to no more question of parleying, but called to him the chief engineer, and commanded him to make ready his battering engines, and the chief petarder also to prepare his petards, and all things to be got in readiness for the siege.

Next day, the artillery having at last arrived, a bank was cast up within fifty paces of the castle, and a platform made for the cannons. Gabions too were set up so as to cover the gunners. The culverin was placed somewhat further off, where it might see more of the flanks of the castle, so as to beat down the sights. All being ready,

at the first dawn of day the cannon began to play, with a great roaring noise and a trembling of the ground, which did greatly terrify the besieged and all that heard it; and then would it for a surety have broken down the walls but that by an evil chance its carriage broke at the second shot, and could not be repaired in less than a day and a half.

This causing again great delay, and finding that the rebels went in and out of the castle at their pleasure, his Excellency sent three hundred men under Sir Thomas Gates to take possession of a small orchard lying close under the walls. He also despatched men in boats to drop upon another island or rock a little lower down the stream, and further boats to carry victuals, so that they might remain there until the castle was taken. The great Sow was got in readiness to advance upon the besieged so soon as ever a sap was made in the walls, while at the same time Sir Charles Percy and Sir Christopher St Lawrence, with four old companies that could be trusted, were bidden to hold themselves concealed, but ready to rush in under cover of the culverin, and to take possession. And this proved the most important disposition of all, for, whether

it was that these great preparations broke down the spirits of those that were within, or whether they hoped to escape where none would look for them, certain it is that that very night the garrison made an attempt to save themselves by a sally, but were so well received by Sir Charles Percy and Sir Christopher St Lawrence that only a few escaped by swimming, under cover of dark, the rest being all put to the sword.

The castle being thus cleared of its late evil tenants, was straightway entered by his Excellency; the cannon and culverin were brought in, the breaches repaired, and a garrison placed in it under the command of Colonel George Carey.

All that went in that day, of whom I myself was one, were greatly astonished at the strength of the place, it being so favoured by nature and so cunningly laid out by art that forty resolute men might well have held it against four thousand. But truly the strength of the Wicked is but weakness, and their guile folly, so that when they think themselves firmest then are they the nearest to their fall. And, this matter being brought to so happy an ending, upon the next day the army marched thence, and encamped on the last day of

May near Cashel, and upon the first of June we entered Limerick, where his Excellency proposed to remain some little while, both to prepare for the further transport of the army, and also to recruit his own health, which had greatly suffered in the late toilsome and uneasy marches.

X

AND now may all men see whether he spares himself, as his enemies declare, or not! Scarcely had he reached Limerick than word was brought to his Excellency that the Queen's garrison at Askeaton was sore distressed, lying in the midst of the rebels and in great want of victual. Whereupon, despite his own fatigue, and despite the newness of his arrival, nought would do him but he must hasten at once to its aid, the rather that the pretended Earl of Desmond had sworn, it was reported, to impeach his passage.

We set out accordingly on the 4th day of June, being accompanied part of the distance by the Earl of Clanricarde and Sir Conyers Clifford, whom the Lord Lieutenant had given command to repair to their several charges.

For some way out of Limerick our road lay over a wide plain, for the most part wooded, the cleared places bare and sorry to look at, and the

ground scurvily covered with short grass, whereas upon the other side of Limerick the grass is of a richness rarely to be seen, more especially in those portions called of the natives *corcass*.

Three miles out his Excellency halted on the side of a small stream, running swiftly between tall banks, and waited till the two gentlemen that were to leave him came up. And, having first dismissed the Earl of Clanricarde with good words, he advanced to meet Sir Conyers Clifford, who was following with Sir Alexander Ratcliffe, and reached out his hand to him, saying—

"Truly, Sir Conyers, I am most loathe to see you go! For I may tell you that there is none in all this army that so strengthens my heart as you do. And, but that the Queen would have it so, you were better methinks by my side than in yonder remote Presidency of yours, which is scarce worthy the time and attention of such a man as thou art."

"Nay, nay, my Lord" says Sir Conyers sturdily. "'Twere best I go, seeing that it is her Majesty's pleasure."

"Aye, aye" echoed his Excellency somewhat bitterly. "We must all do her pleasure, be it for our own banning, or even for hers also!"

With that they looked steadfastly into one another's eyes for the space of some minutes. His Lordship sitting erect on his horse, his head held high as his wont is; Sir Conyers Clifford with his face all wrinkled, as though it had been sat on by his nurse in cradle, but a good face withal, and a soldierly.

"Well fare you well, my Lord, till we meet again, and God be your guide" said he. With that he turned, and rode away to the Westward, and the other knights after him, the sun—which for a wonder shone that day—glittering fair upon their morions and breastplates. And little I dreamed that I should never see his gallant face again. Yet so it was, for he and most of those that were with him that day were slain miserably one little month after by certain ragged O'Rourkes and O'Donnells in the passage of the Curlews in Mayo, as must in due time be told.

But my Lord rode very silently on towards the South. And twice as we were going I heard him sigh, and twice he muttered something, I know not what, only that the name of Sir Conyers Clifford was in it I can affirm. And after a while we left the cleared places behind us, and once more came

to great woods, and to bogs full of large and white-shining pools of shallow water.

Here—knowing that the pretended Desmond and his following were lying somewhere close at hand — his Excellency gave orders to advance with all care, especially as it grew dusk, lest, gathering their courage in the darkness, they should fall upon us when we were least prepared, and so do harm in the confusion.

That evening the sky was of a wonderful clearness, the western portion of it becoming towards sunset inflamed with a pale reddish hue. Southward lay a large grey cloud which somewhat stained this clearness, looking like smoke from a cauldron, but below it the sky was again ruddy, of a clear transparent ruddiness, as it were a lamp set behind a screen of alabaster. A sadder region, or one more disposing the mind to dolorous thoughts I have never seen; the trees being for the most part exceedingly old, and bent as if like to fall; the pools below them of a dull whitish hue, save where the pattern of the branches crossed them in a black entanglement.

Having seen to the disposition of the army his Excellency again rode on a little ahead of the main body, only the avaunt-guard being about

three lengths ahead of him, and the rest about as far behind. Presently turning to me, who still kept nearest to him—

"Strange stuff we are made of, Master Harmonius!" said he rather low, and as if not wishful that others besides myself should hear him. "And strange thoughts visit and invade our minds, especially when the body is somewhat distempered, and our thoughts therefore, being looser, come in and out like wild birds without leave or license. Know you that often as I ride over this sad Earth of Ireland the thought rises to my mind that all these that follow behind me are but a train of the Dead that ride thus, and I their Ghostly King. Dost understand, Oh poet, that there are moods when a man's life seems to himself but a phantom, as it were a picture sun shining upon picture men? moods in which the grave with its writhing company seems to be the one reality, and all else falsity; nay when one were almost glad that the rest were over, and that reality come?"

Then—being surprised at such words from his lips—I was moved to answer strongly.

"Nay my Lord" said I "such talk is surely contrary to reason, if I dare with reverence say so.

What evil destiny or danger of death is there for one whom the Queen's Grace loveth to honour as herself, and whose fortune and merit standeth so high as hath scarce happened to any subject in our times?"

Then he laughed a little, as his way is, and smote upon his horse's neck with the flat of his hand.

"Faith Hal," cried he, "the Queen's Grace has as you say been but too gracious, and has doubtless raised me to a higher estate than any other in this her thrice delectable Kingdom of Ireland. Still, so gracious as she is, she is a woman, and a sovereign, to boot, and sovereigns are to subjects as we to these lower creatures that do serve us. I love Suleiman here, yet were he to stumble and fall, through no fault of his, but because a spear flung from these traitorous Desmonds had wounded him, should I cherish him, think you, as of yore, and make of him still my chief warhorse? Nay I should leave him, I fear, to fare as he could, with these savage woods for stable, and wolves for grooms, and would forthwith mount another horse and go on. For a man's life is more than his horse, were it the noblest that ever champed bit. But when I spoke of doom I spoke rather of that

doom which waits for all of us, were we even crowned kings. Know you that often since we set forth from Dublin, aye even in the thick of fighting, when the kernes were flying hard before us, and I, being in the front, did with the rest smite them down, as a reaper smites corn with his sickle, even then, as my sword descended upon some half naked fool's head, and his blood spouted hot and fast under the blade, the thought would pass through me—"Well knave, there thou goest, and I who sent thee am but the poorer and sorrier knave of the two! For thou at least hast suffered thy last pang, and thy last terror, and thy last misery, and all is over with thee, whereas I have I know not what still to endure, and am the sport of those who from on High behold us, knowing what our end shall be, of which end we ourselves know nothing, nor can by any effort of ours discern so much as the least hint or fragment of the same."

Then I answered nothing, for the truth of his words struck like iron to my heart, knowing that none are so high but what ill may come to them, especially one who like my Lord hath all his life lived in the thick of moving chances and hot encounters, and whose very nature it is to draw danger

upon him, as a magnet draws the needles. And so we rode along, more like a pair of monks muttering paternosters than like a great lord, the chief of an army, with his following. And about eight in the evening we came to the castle of Adare, belonging to the Earl of Kildare, which is set in the midst of great woods and bogs. Here the army had to encounter certain of the Desmonds, but, having forced its way past them, and entered the castle across a wooden bridge, encamped about it for the night.

Early next day, being informed of the way by the guides, we again entered the woods. Hardly however had the advanced guard got in than the rebels discharged upon them a volley of shot, which so discouraged them that they turned and would have fled, but that his Excellency, reproaching them openly for their cowardice, urged them forward, and with the aid of the Marshall and the Earl of Thomond, who that day led the Forlorn Hope, pushed them through with the loss of about 100 of the rebels and 20 of ours, and so came to Askeaton, where [the following day being the Sabbath] we rested, and sermons by his Excellency's orders were read by the chaplains in every quarter of the camp, to the great refreshment of those that heard them.

Now what I have at present to relate, is of so strange and unnatural a character that were it in a tale all would cry out upon its improbability. Nay even I, who am witness of the same, would scarce dare to relate it, but that, before leaving Ireland, his Excellency strictly charged me to write down everything that occurred upon this our journey, to the end that he might have a record of it; seeing that such a record, he said smilingly, would be pleasing to read when he came to be an old man. Which age may God grant in his mercy that he attain to, and not first be cut off and overcome on the way by those that like ravening wolves thirst after his dear life to destroy it!

That day the army, as afore said, rested, his Excellency's own quarters being laid in an old monkery, belonging to the late traitor Earl of Desmond, whose chief lands lay hereabout, lands now forfeited to the Crown, but wrongfully and insolently usurped by the false Earl of Desmond, called in mockery the *Sugane*, or Straw Earl. This monkery of Askeaton stands at a little distance from the castle of the same name, both rising very solitarily in the midst of great champion fields, reaching out for many miles upon one side, while upon the other lies a great forest, stretching down

nearly to the banks of the Shannan—not Shenan as Mr Spenser in his poem improperly calls it—a great and mighty river, fit to convey all the ships of war in the Queen's dominions, but upon which no boats are to be seen save certain small and unstable vessels called of the natives "*cotts*," which are used for the conveyance of fish and other small commodities.

The watch being set, my Lord retired to rest, suffering greatly, as hath of late been usual with him, from heavy cramps brought on by the wetness of the ways, which he endureth with a constancy that in one of his impatient temper is a wonder both to see and to know.

His bed was nothing better than a great heap of straw, covered with clothes, and set at one end of the monkery, in what had formerly been an oratory of the Earl of Desmond, and still retained some semblance of a roof, though much broken by ill usage; while upon the further side rose a tower attained to by a staircase. Being unable to sleep my Lord desired me to stay awhile beside him, and, leaning upon his elbow, he discoursed of many things; some sorrowful, others of a more cheerful character, as his mood was. Yet ever his talk recurred to this woeful country Ireland, of

which in an evil moment he had, so he declared, accepted the charge; saying that it passed the wit of man to devise means which would bring it to subjection, unless it were wholly conquered and destroyed by the sword, and its people rooted out by famine; as had been done in former times by the Lord Grey, Sir John Perrot, and others, in this very province of Munster.

And of many other things discoursed he, of which I in truth remember little, being in sore straits with the desire to sleep, so that in mine own despite my head sank upon my breast, and his Lordship's words sounded hollow and distant, like the voice of one that speaketh afar off.

Now there was a stone doorway immediately in front of where his Excellency was lying, from which doorway a staircase led to the tower, at foot of which tower a sentry was placed, whose duty it was to walk to and fro the passage between the chapel in which my Lord lay and that larger portion of the building wherein other gentlemen, to wit my Lord of Thomond, Sir John Amory, Captain Sethcock and others, were disposed.

The moon that night was nearly at the full, but much obscured with clouds, and shone with a strange steelly glitter, now bright, and anon

dark, so that it seemed to me to dip and dance in the sky, as a boat doth upon stormy waves; nay to shine now in one place, and now again suddenly in another; though whether it really did so, or, my eyes being heavy, it appeared to do so, I cannot of a truth say.

His Excellency had already lain down, having in part divested himself of his clothes, only his inner coat and hose he still retained, being fearful of the chill of that place; a great cloak lined with miniver being also flung around him to keep him from the roughness of the ground.

Meseems I must have slept awhile, for what happened just before I remember not. Suddenly I felt his Excellency clutch me, and when I looked up he had reared himself erect in his bed, his eyes all wide and staring, and with a loud voice he cried to me to know—Who was That?

So I turned, fearing I knew not what, and heavy still by reason of my sleep. And lo! in the middle of the doorway leading to the tower stood a man, having upon him clothes made in the Irish fashion; to wit a long dark cloak, which the natives call a *bratt*, covering him nearly to the feet, and under it a close-fitting vest of white stuff, and trews upon his legs. And he, neither

going nor yet advancing, stood there, as though he were a graven statue, and gazed ever fixedly upon his Excellency. And his age was seemingly that of a man well stricken in years, and his face very hollow and worn of aspect, yet haughty withal, like one that had endured the last extremity, and now, for very despair, careth not what befalls him. And there was a smile upon his lips, such a smile as I n'er saw before, and pray to God in his mercy I may never see again; a smile such as a dead man might wear when his murderer drew nigh, as the custom is, and placed his hand upon his breast, and the blood gushed out before all men for a token. Yea a smile of pleasure too, as of one whose enemy is brought low, and who joys to think that with his very eyes he shall behold some evil and cruel hap befal him.

So we stood while a man might count ten; he facing us all the time. Then his Excellency, taking up his sword, which lay by the bed, rose suddenly, and with a threatening look rushed toward the doorway. But when he was about six paces from it he stopped, and began to shiver greatly. So I looked, and lo! there was nothing to be seen, only the stars and the moonlight. Nevertheless a rumbling noise as of distant

thunder, seemed to me to fill the air, coming from a great way off, and dying slowly away toward the river.

His Excellency, coming back, stood silent for a while; then motioned to me to call the sentry who was at the foot of the tower, and when he was come near he asked him saying—"Didst see any one pass?"

Whereat the man looked bewildered, like one that had been roused from sleep, though he stood erect before us. And he answered No, that he had seen no man pass.

"And did you hear nought?" said I; for the noise of that strange sound seemed still to be in our ears, so that methought the very air rang and trembled with it.

To this the man answering nothing, I looked again, and saw that his eyes were closing, like one that had no power to keep them open; his mouth too opening and shutting strangely, as if of itself.

Seeing that his Excellency waxed suddenly angry, and, seizing him by the throat, shook him to and fro, so that the pike which he carried rattled and fell to the ground.

"What ails you sirrah?" cried he. "Art drunk?

or dost think the work of guarding the Queen's Viceroy so trifling a task that it can be done in this neglectful fashion? Dost not fear for thy life, lest thou be shot for a traitor, and an aider and abettor of traitors?"

While he was yet speaking, suddenly the same sound was in both our ears, and with it a shock as if the ground had opened; and a great and exceeding rumble like thunder, yet not like any thunder that ever I heard.

Then his Excellency, loosing hold of the sentry, motioned to me saying, "Come up with me, Hal, into yonder tower, for of a surety I will find out whence came yonder man, and for what purpose he presumed to trouble us this night."

When we had got up into the tower, which was of no great height, being approached by only some 30 steps, we came out on to a flattish space above. And at first we saw nought, save the level country, looking all grey in the moonlight, and the forest, stretching darkly away as it seemed to the confines of the earth, and that great river the Shannan spreading westward like a broad lake or inland sea. Below us the ground was deep with fog, which lay in an uneven manner over the land, gathered as it were i packs, here

a space bare, and there another covered to the depth of many feet; and so thick and solid that it seemed as if one might walk thereon.

Then, as we stood looking out over it, lo! that fog seemed to cleave into two parts, as we read in Holy Writ that the Red Sea was cleft; and a passage appeared down the midst thereof, which passage seemed about two going paces wide, and at first to be utterly void of all life or movement. Nevertheless, after my Lord and I had stood awhile looking at it, behold! a stranger, and a more terrible sight was seen. For all along those pathways which, when first we saw them were, I say, devoid of life, it presently seemed to our eyes that a great multitude of people were beginning to pass, and to approach that castle whereon we stood. Though whence they came God alone knoweth, for there was no place for them to come out of, neither village, nor habitation of any sort; all this country round Askeaton, (which was in former times I was told somewhat thickly peopled) having been utterly destroyed in the last wars first by Sir Nicholas Malby the President of Connaught, and afterwards by my Lord of Ormonde and Sir Henry Pelham; who utterly levelled all habitations, both small and great,

slaying the people, and destroying the harvest and beasts of the field, so that it remains waste and void unto this day.

Nevertheless I who write these words do hereby solemnly take oath that I did with mine own eyes see that great multitude of people advancing directly towards us. And as they came nearer I could plainly distinguish one from another, so that it seemed to me that only a small portion of them were full-grown men, the rest being women or children, gathered into companies, each company by itself, some in sixes or sevens, and some in tens as it served. And in each group the children went first in a little band, and after them a man and woman side by side, or sometimes two or three women, and in the rear followed the aged people, both men and women, some of these so old and feeble that I was amazed at the sight of their skinny faces, which seemed to be those of skeletons rather than of living men or women. With regard to the fashion of their raiment I could see little, by reason of the fog and obscurity, but methought they were such as are worn in this country, the more so that many appeared to have scarce on any raiment at all, only sorry weeds hanging around them; but, whenever I tried to

distinguish anything clearly, all at once it seemed to melt away into that fog out of which it came.

Now, when I saw that sight, and those long trains of figures—formed as it were out of the mist of the ground, yet moving one after the other and having limbs and bodies like other men—seeing this I am fain to avow that I stood like one in a trance, trembling in every limb, and the hair of my head began to rise, so that I felt the bristling thereof, and my heart was as a weaver's shuttle, running to and fro in my breast so that it scarce allowed me time to breathe.

Then, glancing at his Excellency, I saw that he too was much moved at that strange sight. Nevertheless his cheek kept its usual colour, and he gazed steadfastly at what lay below. Now there were others who had been aroused by the noise; to wit Sir Thomas Egerton, Sir Henry Danvers and some more gentlemen, who had recently come up upon a wall which ran immediately below us; and with them it seemed to me that I discerned another figure; which figure was grey and tall, and moved along with a slow stately pace, rather gliding as it seemed than walking, till it stood right in front of us. Suddenly I heard the voice of Colonel Sethcock, who had

just then come out upon the same portion of the tower upon which we stood. And he, crying with an exceedingly loud voice, exclaimed—"Christ Jesus have mercy upon us! Yonder is the Desmond himself."

"What Desmond?" asked my Lord, turning sharply round to him, and speaking quickly. Then —seeing that he made no answer, only that his teeth chattered like one in a palsy, so that no words could come through them—

"What Desmond?" he repeated sharply.

"The old Desmond" replied the other, only rather like a man in a dream than as if he understood rightly what he said—"him that was slain at Castlemain in the county of Kerry."

"And if that be he," said my Lord, "who in God's name are these?"—pointing to the crowd which still moved below.

To this Colonel Sethcock answered nothing, and we, gazing at him, saw that his face was ghastly as the faces of those below; and much I misdoubt me but that the memory of some deed of more than common kind was stirring within him, else had he never looked so wan and terrified, like a man upon whom some ill, committed in his life and thought to have been left behind,

had suddenly sprung up again to confront him.

But at last—"Who are they, your Excellency?" said he with a sort of break in his voice, and upon his face, for all its terror, an evil smile. "Your Excellency asks me who are they, when there were an hundred and thirty thousand—men, women, and children of all degrees—slain or died of famine during that time, and if their spirits wander to this day is that my fault, or shall their deaths be accounted to me as a sin more than to others, who did even as I did, or is their blood more upon *my* head than upon the heads of other men? Is it my fault I ask? Is it *mine?* Is it *mine?* Is it *mine?*"

These three last words shrieked he louder and louder, waving his hands, and stepping back as if to wave away some that pressed upon him; though there was nothing that we who stood nearest to him could see. And at length, still waving his hand in the air, he fled along the battlement, shrieking and raving like a man distraught; we meanwhile gazing one at another, and wondering greatly within ourselves what all this might mean. But when we turned again to the ground, lo! there was nothing of all that great multitude to be seen; only the moonlight shining upon the

stunted bushes—sorry blackthorns, sloeberries and the like—which rose up here and there out of the flatness; nay the very fog itself had melted away, so that we could see to the confines of the ocean, and all so void of life that it seemed certain that what we had seen had been no other than a phantom of the night, created doubtless by the craft of evil spirits, such as Scripture saith walk about seeking whom they may devour; of which sort this distracted Land has, I dare affirm, a larger number than most.

"Gentlemen" said my Lord, seeing that all stood trembling and astonished, "we have seen a strange sight, and meseems 'twere fitting we retired to meditate thereon, and to compose our minds so that we be not shaken out of our Constancy by ought that may occur; commending ourselves to Almighty God, in whose hands we and all things, whether terrestrial or superterrestrial, live and are contained. And so I dismiss you to such rest as you may obtain, which I for my part purpose also to seek."

With these words, he saluted them very nobly, and descended the steps; the other gentlemen retiring also, every man to his own quarters. Nor was there any more disturbance that night, neither

sight nor sound; only a moaning of the wind, which seemed to wander sadly round those ruined walls, set in the midst of so great a desolation. But next morning when I enquired how Colonel Sethcock fared, I learnt that on returning to his own quarters he had fallen into a great swoon, with much groaning; and so continued all that day and the next, so that we were forced to leave him behind us in the charge of a few soldiers; nor did he, as I afterwards learned, know anyone for a full fortnight more; and ever since then, (now some three months) he moaneth and shivereth, they say, like one that hath something upon his mind, and is so shrunk and wasted as to be scarce recognizable of those that knew him aforetime.

XI

SEEING that nothing of any note happened for some time, I will for brevity's sake set down here what I find entered from day to day in the record kept by me at my Lord's desire; in which record I each night wrote down that which seemed of most moment in the day preceding.

June 4. My Lord set forth for Crumme castle, belonging to the Earl of Kildare, and lay there with all the army.

June 6. This day during a skirmish was slain of the rebels one Burke, a great rascal, and on our side Sir Henry Norris, whose leg being broken by a bullet, after severe suffering he died, greatly regretted of the entire army.

June 7. This day came by messenger letters to his Excellency from the Queen's Majesty, at reading whereof my Lord seemed but ill pleased.

June 8. Rain fell heavily all night and his Excellency's encampment was like to have been washed away. The straw on which he lay being

too wet to sleep upon, my Lord sat up and read the Essays of Montaigne until the morning.

June 10. His Excellency sent letters by certain messengers who went post to Court with them. Divers of my Lord's people were put on pensions to live at 5 pence a day, or else return to their friends.

June 11. His Excellency took one of the rebels' castles and razed it, slaying divers who had concealed themselves therein, but sparing two women; of whom there had been seven, but the rest were by some accident slain with the garrison.

June 30. A spy brought in and hanged.

July 4. A girl, who had warned divers rebels to escape, brought in by a company of soldiers. After examining her his Excellency commanded her to be set at liberty, whereat was much dissatisfaction amongst certain of his council, who would fain have seen her hanged.

July 5. This day, being Sunday, his Excellency rested at Ballingar, at an house belonging to Sir James Devereux. Mr Prettyman, the chaplain in ordinary, preached. His text was the I Epistle of S. Peter; the 5th chapter, and 5th verse. "*God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace unto the*

humble." After the preaching his Excellency knighted Sir John Barrington and Sir Michael Foster. Heads of Mac Dermot Oge and Turlough O'Toole sent in.

July 10. Last night after the watch was set an alarm was raised; his Excellency himself rising and coming out, supposing it to be some treacherous surprise of the rebels. There was a great panic in the camp, certain of the soldiery crying out that the O'Tooles were amongst them, others the Macarthys, and others they knew not who, only that some foes were there they were sure. The army having entered into quarters late that night the confusion was very great; the ground too upon which the camp was pitched was very wet so that many slipped in the mud, or fell over great stepping stones set hither and thither in the pathway. Being so dark, and the rain falling, torches were hastily lit; which same seemed but to increase the confusion, being reflected brokenly here and there in the pools of water. So strange a scene I have scarce beheld; men running wildly hither and thither, many of them wellnigh stark naked, having pulled off their clothes to dry them; and all in the confusion taking one another for the Irish, so that they were like to have been

slain, only that weapons, happily, were scant amongst them.

After the confusion had continued for a long time, and many been bruised with falling over the stones, or striking one another in their haste, it was found that the enemy was nought but a great herd of cows, belonging to those rebels in whose houses we lay; the said cows having been driven by the women into the mountains, and having of their own accord returned to their former quarters, they being, in the savage fashion of this country, wont to lodge in the same house as their owners. Which cause being ascertained, order was at length restored, and the army returned, somewhat shamefacedly, every man to his own quarters.

July 12. This day we crossed the mountains, which though of no great height are yet difficult to traverse by reason of the great slipperiness of their rocks. Leaving the army on the road to Fermoy, his Excellency with an hundred horse rode to Mallow, and lay that night at the house of the President of Munster. Here he was met by the Lord Barry with 60 horse, also by a gentleman of the English Pale, by name Mr John Delahide, who, having much property

in Kerry, had been constrained for the safety of his goods to appear to take part with the rebels. He—pleading the urgency of this need, and his own sorrow for the same—was by his Lordship received into favour, the rather that he was a gentleman of good address, speaking English as few in this land speak it, yet withal well acquainted with the country. Whom, keeping beside him as he rode back to camp, his Excellency discoursed much; seeming to be better pleased with him than with any of this land's breeding he hath yet encountered.

After quitting Mallow we again crossed a portion of the great woods, in which we were met by the rebels, and at a skirmish at one of the passes Sir Henry Danvers was shot in the face, but seems like, the doctors say, to do well. His Excellency purposed lodging that night half a mile short of Conna, but, finding the houses there had been burned by the rebels, he lodged the army betwixt Conna and Mogeelly, and slept himself at a castle which one Mr Pine holds of Sir Walter Raleigh. This castle being better furnished, and fitter for entertainment than most of the places he had lain in, his Excellency invited the Lord Barry to sup with him; also

Mr Delahide, with the President of Munster, and other gentlemen, besides his own accustomed following.

The dinner over, and the gentlemen gathered to wine and discourse, there entered one who whispered something to Mr Delahide; whereupon, addressing his Excellency, he told him that an old Irish harper stayed without, and would he allow him to come in, and give the company a specimen of his quality.

This his Excellency permitting, they brought in the harper, who was in truth a man very old and venerable to look on; having a long white beard which fell to his breast. His clothes were of green flannel, made after this country's manner, belted in at the waist, and falling below the knee. His legs bare, only for short hose of wool, and his feet shod with shoes or buskins of wolf skin; the hair outside, tied with two thongs across the instep, the toes and heels flat, and the name of them, as I understand, in the Irish tongue "*pampooties*" or "*pampooters.*" His head was also bare, the hair on it of a snowy whiteness, falling heavily over the forehead in a *glibbe.* For his face it was well writ over with the map of his age, only the eyes still dark and fiery; and the

look of them very strange, being both fierce and timorous at once.

His harp was larger than any harp I had yet seen in this country, standing some four feet from the ground, and painted a lively green colour with sundry devices, and traceries of curious significance; also leaves and other ornaments, but all much bleached and defaced, doubtless by rough weather and the evil usage it had met with.

He—coming forward in a lull of the discourse—bowed himself low to the company, especially to his Excellency, who sat at the head of the table. And immediately he began to stray his fingers lightly over the strings, running from one to the other, and looking about him, fearfully yet confidently, as if to ask what was wished. And that strain he played reminded me of the song that I had heard sung by the wild woman in the hollow place of the wood, the morning that I rode forth from Kilkenny with the Butler kerne, and lost my way in the forest. And, having come to an end of it, he paused, and looked round from one to another, as it were from under the pent-house of his brows, which for all his age were black still and very thick.

Then certain airs were commanded, which he

played; and afterwards Mr Delahide said some words to him in the Irish tongue, urging him to play or sing something; at which he shook his head, yet it seemed to me reluctantly, as if he would fain have done that which was required of him, only durst not.

"What asked you of him?" enquired his Excellency, who like myself had observed this commerce between them.

"I desired him" replied Mr Delahide "to sing a dirge, which he himself had composed, and which in times past I have often heard him sing, in honour of one Rory Oge O'More, whose harper or *Sennachie*—that being the Irish word—he formerly was, which of all pieces writ in the Irish tongue seemed ever to me the most moving, both for the words and the air thereof."

"And who or what was this Rory Oge O'More?" asked his Excellency "for meseems his name is familiar to me."

"As vile, dangerous, and pestilent a Rebel as ever this land, which is rich in little else, hath bred!" cried the President of Munster. "And I wonder that Mr Delahide would even name him in this presence, still less desire songs in his honour to be sung before one who stands as our

Queen's Viceregent, and before whom the countenancing of such songs is a clear insolence to her greatness."

"Yet, methinks, as the song in question is in the Irish tongue, and that none here save myself, and possibly you, my lord President, know ought of that language, it were scarce perilous to the loyalty even of the least wary to sit and listen to what they could by no means understand!" Mr Delahide said mockingly, and with a smile upon his lips.

"Marry, that is true!" cried his Excellency. "Therefore, Mr Delahide, I charge you to command him to sing this song, about which you have moved my curiosity, and, if danger there be in his singing, I myself will be his surety that no harm shall happen to him for the said cause."

His Lordship having so spoken, Mr Delahide spake a few words again in Irish to the harper; who thereat straightened himself, flinging suddenly off that bowed and dejected aspect he had hitherto worn, and looking a full score of years younger, so brightly did his eyes flash and his whole face alter. And he looked about him now, no longer scared and timorous, but with a fierce defiant air; and especially I noted that he so looked at the

President of Munster, as much as to say that he understood his animosity, yet feared it not, having the sanction of one that was greater than he.

So, having turned his harp about, he lifted it a little, and set it upon a stool or trestle that stood there; and placing himself beside it, struck his hands across the strings with a careless gesture. Then, having played awhile, he suddenly broke out into a sort of singing, which yet was hardly singing, but rather a chant or crooning noise, which swelled and swelled so that at times it seemed to rise to the very rafters, rolling and beating about like thunder within our ears, and again to sink till it was no louder than the whisper of a summer stream over grass and small stones; his harp the while seeming to follow and take part, more like a thing of separate life joining in at its own pleasure, than an instrument played by the hands. Stranger singing and playing I never heard before, nor expect ever to hear again.

It chanced that, being next to the window, I saw what was not, I think, seen of others in the company. For when that strange song or chant first began all the kernes, galloglasses, and other wild Irish mustered without started and stared,

seeming to prick their ears, as a horse does at the sound of the trumpet. Presently, as it went on, they began to draw nearer and nearer; yea the very bearers of burdens and churls,—creatures seemingly scarce human—gathered, till a score or more were below the window. And I marked that they looked one at the other with eyes wide open, as if asking how such a song came to be heard in such a place and before such company. Then—that wild singing still continuing, and rising ever louder and louder—they began to grip at one another with their hands, and to move to and fro with their feet, as if they would fain have broken into wild dancing and leaping. Only, whenever anyone came out of the castle, they all dispersed suddenly; or fell flat upon the ground, hoping to escape notice in the dark, but so soon as that person had passed on, they rose up again, and crept nearer and nearer, as if their very souls fed upon what they heard!

The evening growing late, as soon as this strange song or dirge was over, and my Lord had dismissed the old man with a fair gift of money, the company broke up; his Excellency retiring to his chamber. Thither I was about to follow him when Mr Delahide requested me to bear him

company a little longer, he being not yet inclined, he said, for sleep. To pleasure him I remained therefore where I was; we two sitting down again, close to where a great chimney gaped in the side of the hall, adown which the wind whistled with a shrill complaining sound.

And [by way perhaps of accompaniment to that dolorous music, or to those other wild strains we had late listened to] he related to me, I remember, on that occasion sundry tales which be current in this country; as of Wraiths, and Goblins; of Presentiment, and Tragical Prophecies; also of foul Witch-women who wait on men to announce to them their coming Doom; and many other such bogyish and old-wife tales, which, though devoid of all reasonable probability, are yet apt to make a man feel goose-skinned and timorous if he chance to waken towards two or three of a morning, and to see the moon peeping whitely at him from behind some corpse-coloured cloud.

When we at length parted he gave me a scroll to deliver to his Lordship; telling me that it was a translation of that song or dirge the harper had sung, which he had himself put into English, and which his Excellency it seems had desired to see. This I promised to do; and—finding on entering

his chamber that my Lord had not yet retired to rest—I delivered it into his hands.

Having glanced at it himself, he commanded me to read it aloud, which I did to the best of my powers, the handwriting being very crabbed, and the story a confused and bombastical invention, setting forth with many savage illustrations the greatness and glory of this Rory Oge O'More, and the treachery by which his end had been accomplished; the said tale or invention, I own, interesting me slightly.

But his Lordship apparently took it otherwise, for he remained musing awhile after the reading was over. And at last—

"Did the thought ever come to you Hal" said he suddenly "that 'twere well these Irish—especially such as are given to the composing of similar songs and dirges—should not be acquainted with the English tongue, or indeed with any civilised and current language?"

"Credit me, no, my Lord" said I. "On the contrary it seems to me that the best hope of their ceasing from their savagery lies in the learning of them our own tongue; were it by compulsion, and the punishment of such as fail to acquire the same."

"For their sakes perchance, Hal, but 'twas rather of our own I meant."

"Ours? my Lord" said I "how could the acquiring of English by these savages work us either good or ill?"

"In this way Hal. Think you if such a tale as you have just read to me were put into some language current among men of letters 'twould produce no effect upon those that heard it?"

"Faith, my Lord" said I "it seemed to my poor judgment to be a wild and heathenish sort of composition, not pertaining to any recognized progression of words, whether of prose or poetry, but a confused and disorderly admixture of both."

"For the form, Hal, I bow to thy superior authority! For all that it seemed to me as I listened, and especially as I recalled the looks and gestures of yonder harper in the hall, that 'twere as well for our credit that we alone had the exposition of our quarrel with this people, and not they theirs also. And of this I am sure, that were I born an Irishman, and given to the poetic craft, I could tell such a tale as would send every maid that heard it weeping to her bed; aye and might chance to leave behind it not a few of those

Tragedies by which our London stage has of late been held."

"That your Lordship," said I gravely, "is not an Irishman (which to suppose even in a jest seems to me I own profane) is no doubt fortunate. But, with regard to those that are such by birth, methinks there is little fear of any such thought visiting their minds; they doubtless knowing themselves to be as inferior to us by nature as they are by birth and breeding, a circumstance which is to all men visible and manifest."

"Oh Hal, Hal! least imaginative of poets!" cried he, shaking his hand at me, "'Tis little, trust me, good Pomposity, we know about such matters, or can so much as guess at the thoughts of others, especially of those we despise; contempt being as it were a natural veil or blinder of the eyes, hindering us from guessing how they whom we scorn do in their turn regard us. What says Montaigne—'When my cat and I entertain each other with apish tricks who knows but I make to my cat more cause for sport and derision than she does to me; nay who knows but it is a mere defect of my not understanding her language that we agree no better?'"

These words of his Lordship—which at the time

I own, seemed to me fantastical—came back to my memory a few days later. For as we were on the road to Waterford it chanced that there broke out a violent quarrel between Sir Henry Sudley, newly made knight after the skirmish near Askeaton, and one Major Morrison, who had expected knighthood at the same time, yet had not hitherto received it. And, whether this disappointment rankled in his mind, or whether some earlier quarrel was brewing between the two gentlemen, certain it is that a vehement dispute arose, each man laying his hand upon his sword, and both uttering many despiteful words; whereupon others of their company joined in, some on one side, and some on the other; so that it seemed as if the matter thus begun was like to grow to a formidable size and aspect.

Now it befel that I, riding at the time somewhat in the rear, chanced to cast my eye upon certain of the kernes who carried the provisions, of whom —horses being scarce—there were then with the army great numbers. And, being near enough to see their faces, I noticed that they looked eagerly one at another; their eyes gleaming, as if well pleased at this quarrel so suddenly broken out, and hoping that it might go further. An observation which at first surprised me not a little, it seeming

scarce natural that creatures so debased should take any note of what went on before them, any more than if they had been in reality beasts of burden. For as Porphyry shows that there is a scale of creatures rising through the lower animals to ourselves, and through us to the Heavenly Essences, or Angels, so it had always seemed to me natural to regard these native Irish as intermediate betwixt us and the lower animals, having the outward form of man, but in all higher matters no share of his heritage. A mode of regarding the matter which I now perceive may be carried too far, and might even lead to a foolish and heady arrogance, seeing that they are in truth humans like ourselves, as are also the Red Americans, and other lowly races; a reflection which 'twere well to keep before the mind, so as to avoid the sin of arrogance, and to preserve our souls in a state of due humility, as becometh Christian men.

XII

OFTEN, when there has been question of the Irish service, I have wondered to hear men cry out against those woods with which so much of the surface of this country is still covered. And that, not husbandmen merely, or rough persons, who for gain's sake naturally love a clear soil, but even those who, like poor Mr Spenser lately dead, might be expected to take a livelier and less self-bounded view of the matter. For 'tis plain, thought I, that forests are in themselves pleasing things; being gifts from God to man, given both for coolness in the hot season, and also to afford the means of kindling a fire, and so keeping in the natural heat of the body when winter is at hand, snow falls, and the cold winds, howling over the earth, turn blue his cheeks, and make his courage to feel as nipped and as numb as his finger ends.

Since I have myself been in Ireland however,

especially since this journey that I took with his Excellency through the forests lying around the mountains called Galtimore or the Galtee, I have come to view the matter otherwise, and to understand many things which formerly surprised me. For these forests—stretching nigh 'tis said from sea to sea—give harbourage to every kind of noxious beast, of which the least noxious are the wolves (which in some portions abound terribly, slaying all who travel alone through it), and the worst are those foul pests and curses to humanity called the Wood-kernes or Wood-caterans ; who, being protected themselves by the density of their thorny thickets, dwell in safety, and at night, like wolves, only far more wickedly, sally out to destroy all that be not of their own nature and kidney. So that I can now well understand that saying widely spread abroad, and to be heard upon every loyal lip, namely, that " Ireland never will be conquered while the leaves are on the trees," and do hold it part of true policy and sound wisdom to cut down these same traitor-harbouring trees wherever and wheresoever they can be got at; seeing that it is better plainly to have a naked land and obedience, than a well-covered one filled with such godless Runagates and Haltersacks.

Having greatly suffered in its passage through the southern portion of this forest, it was with the more satisfaction that the army attained a somewhat clearer place, standing upon the slope of the lower hills; where the camp could be set out free of the bushes, which be the lurking places of these scurvy thieves, and whence they creep out privily when none expect them. His Excellency's tent was set at a little distance from the camp, so that he might enjoy more privacy; and having sent out a party of horse to burn certain villages belonging to the tribe of the O'Dwyers, he retired to rest, trusting to enjoy some sound sleep; a restoration to which he hath of late, unhappily, been too commonly a stranger.

Early next morning I was by his orders at his tent, it not being yet six of the clock, but the sun already high, and the birds singing lustily. I found him already risen, having spent a good night, and, the morning being unwontedly fair, he was moved to go out, and desired me to accompany him; an order which I with all readiness obeyed.

At this place a kind of green lane or track led into the heart of the forest, somewhat poached in portions by the recent tread of horses, but withal firm and pleasant to walk upon. Indeed it was

strange to see how fair and serene all looked, so that even we, who knew how far from the reality that semblance was, could scarce forbear being beguiled by it. Nor would anyone, seeing it so solitary, have believed that a great company of men and horses were gathered so near at hand; for though from time to time we could hear the buzzing sound of voices, and the jingling of bridles, or the rallying note of a bugle, yet 'twas so mixed and broken that the finches, merles, and other dainty Chanters of the wood could readily be discerned above it all.

Then—the scene being thus solitary, and my Lord seemingly little disposed to speech—my mind was moved to meditations, such as come to a man at such times, and chiefly I thought of my dear lad Frank Gardner, who had travelled over to this land so blithely, nothing doubting that he would win fame and honour, and who now lieth dead under this Irish sod, that looks so fresh and fair to the eye, yet carries within it so many a bloody corpse, both of those that belong to the land, and those that have come over to subdue it and bring it to civility.

So thinking, I sighed several times heavily, which sighing attracted his Lordship's attention,

who had hitherto walked along silently, stroking his beard from time to time; his coat of cinnabar velvet (for he had not yet put on armour)—looking like gold in the rays of sunlight; his whole gait and port, so noble that it was a wonder to see.

"How now, friend Harmonius?" quoth he, "whence these sighs which seem to be tearing thy heart in twain? Sure this sunlight, which rarely lights us in so blithe a fashion, might inspire merrier thoughts than seem to be inflating thy bosom. Nay, as I look again, thy countenance is even more dolorous than its wont, or than thy garb—" (which that day was plain black, only the sleeves slashed with white silk above the elbows).

"Alas, my Lord," said I, "I was thinking of poor Frank Gardner, who, your Lordship knows, was ever to me as a young brother, and whose death lies sore upon my heart; the rather that but for my foolish aid he had never come hither, but would be standing safe on English sward, the joy of his mother, who, poor lady! is, as your Lordship is aware, a widow, and hath no other son than he of whom she is so cruelly bereft."

Then, with that kindliness, which, more even than his great qualities, binds men to him, his Excellency laid his hand upon my shoulder, softly, as a woman might.

"Faith Hal" said he "I might have guessed whither thy thoughts, poor faithful one, had gone, and so have spared thee the question! Well I know how thou enshrinest that lad's memory in thy heart, nor do I blame thee, for a gallanter youth never eyes rested on, or one that would have made a better soldier had he been spared to come to man's estate. Yet remember this, good Hal, Death cometh to us all, and spareth not any place, the safest and securest no more than the very battlefield; therefore lay not that evil chance to thine own score, as if through fault of thine it came about. Bethink thee too how many lives are better than *un bel morire?* For this big word Death, about which we make such a pother as if 'twere the only ill in the world, only think of what a sea of ills is it the cure. For what says Francis—'Revenge triumphs over it, love slights it, honour aspires to it, grief flies to it.' Again 'a man would die' says he 'only from mere weariness to the same thing over and over.' Or if you will not heed Francis—whom for all his wit I

know you love little—list to the ancient poet, who tells us that no security will so case a man but what some dart will find him out; 'for he may arm himself' he says 'with steel and brass, yet Death will pull his head out of the helmet!'—with which citation I will e'en bring my discourse to an end, seeing that my eloquence savours somewhat of pedantry."

So saying, and losing go of my shoulder, his Lordship advanced at a quicker step, as if to give me no time to relapse into any more such vapourish musings. Now we had just reached a small knoll or hillock, rising out of the plain ground of the forest, which knoll he ascended, and I with him. As far as I could see it was part composed of rock, very grey in colour, and of a softish texture, and upon the top rose a small group of trees, their trunks large, and covered with moss, hanging down in bags. The earth —as throughout this portion of Ireland—was reddish brown, and of a boggy quality, the greater portion of it covered with a small-leaved plant of shrub-like growth giving out under the foot an aromatic odour, and called for this reason, as I have learned, *Bog myrtle.* A comelier spot I have rarely seen, the sun-light falling slant-wise betwixt

the trees; the small heaths and other forest flowers shining gayly; as also did certain young shrubs of birch which sprouted here and there, the bark whereof was of a shining lustre, like freshly woven satin, and their leaves so green and so daintily set on the stalks that they seemed to flutter at every breath.

My Lord took note of all this, smiling a little as he looked around him, and at last—"Truly, Hal, Ned Spenser was right when he called it a fair land and a goodly as any under Heaven!" cried he. "I know not why, but there are moments when my heart seems to yearn to it, for all the plagues it brings me; moments when I say to myself that I would gladly serve it, were it for any time or in any office, if I could thereby hope to bring it to peace and prosperity at the last."

"Every man, my Lord," replied I gravely, "has it seems to me his own office upon earth appointed to him, like the stars which shine in the heavens, and are not permitted by any means to change their order. And for remaining in this country, only consider how poor Mr Spenser was himself forced to flee from it at the beginning of the late troubles, nor did he escape without loss of all that he had acquired; so that for grief and

disappointment he has himself since died miserably."

"True," answered my Lord sighing. "As that knave Raleigh says, it is indeed a 'loste land,' and he that thinks to bring peace to it will only bring woe upon himself, and in no wise mend that which seems beyond the power or wit of man to heal. And yet, Hal, it seems to me that the best way of dealing with this people has not been found, though what that way is, beshrew me if I can tell you!"

Then—just as I was about to point out how many noble gentlemen had taken the pains to that end, yea our gracious Queen herself had not spared her own labour—suddenly there came a sound of horses' hoofs and a clinking of bridles, and looking up we saw, coming two by two through the forest, —for there was not room on the path for more to go abreast—that troop of horse which my Lord had sent out the night before.

Seeing us standing there, and perceiving all at once that it was his Lordship, the foremost of the riders—a Colour Sergeant by name Johnson, a man out of Lincolnshire—turned in our direction, and, riding up, saluted, bridling in his horse, and waiting for his Excellency to speak; the other men of the troop remaining a few paces behind.

Then his Lordship, straightening himself, looked at the man, and addressing him, said—

"You executed my orders Sergeant?"

"Verily we did, my Lord."

"And did the men whom you were sent after resist?"

"Faith, my Lord, we gave them scant opportunity," replied the fellow. "For we caught them napping like foxes in their burrow, and have even made a clean end of the whole brood!"

"Had they no watch then?" enquired his Lordship.

"If they had, my Lord, the sentry rascals were asleep, so had no chance to play us any of their scurvy tricks, for their heads were off their shoulders like the rest, ere they had well shaken from them their drowsiness."

Then—seeing that his Lordship frowned somewhat, as if scarce as well pleased with the tidings as might have been expected—the Sergeant beckoned to one of the troopers who rode immediately behind him, and across whose saddle as I had already noticed hung a great leathern sack, such as farmers use for carrying grain, and before we fully understood what his purport was, he had taken it from the man, and with a blunt—

"Your Lordship will see whether we have misspent our time or not!"—he turned it over on the grass.

And lo! there rolled out of it a score or more of heads, which—there being at that place a little declivity, or falling away of the ground, and the heads of their nature round—they fell and slid one over the other; rolling on and on to the foot of that knoll on which we stood, much as though they had been balls sent in some game of bowls or rounders; until—that impulse which projected them being spent—they lay amongst the grass and flowering weeds, which half hid them, yet not so completely but what they and all the ground about were freaked with drops of blood. And some of the heads appeared to be those of old men, the hair grey or scanty, while others were young and smooth of face, and one belike was a woman, for its hair was long, and all seemed to stare amazed, as if the poor carrion wondered greatly what had befallen it, and had scarce yet got over that confusion and amazement in which it had died.

Then—looking at them as they lay there, gazing up as it seemed with glassy eyes—I could not but be for a moment moved to see so many

fellow creatures, who—let them be never such rebels—had lain down last night, nothing doubting but that they should rise again in the morning, and were now for ever utterly stark and cold. Nevertheless that in so slaying them, even in their sleep and unawares, we rendered them no other than their deserts is certain. For as rats and similar vermin must be slain when and how we can find them, so also traitors, and those who rebel against God and their sovereign. For see how David, who was the man after God's own heart, scrupled not to surprise the Philistines in their sleep, or Jael, who slew Sisera in her own tent, and was upon that account regarded as a glory to her people, although but a woman. Which things are clearly written for our example, showing that in dealing with a froward savage people we must be guided, less by those precepts which prevail betwixt civilized men, than by those fortunate gifts of cunning and strategy whereby we are enabled to triumph over the strength of savage beasts, seeking them in their holes and dwelling places, and there smiting them, lest, being left untroubled, they, from very ferocity and bestial rage, turn and rend us.

But my Lord—having stared awhile upon that

red carrion lying so quietly at our feet—turned and strode suddenly back with long steps to his tent; uttering no word, either of praise or of blame.

After waiting awhile, finding that he did not return, I followed him, and found him pacing to and fro with an air of no little disquietude.

"Are you ill, my Lord?" I asked, for his face seemed to me paler than usual, and his features were discomposed, like those of a man seized with some sudden distemper.

"Am I Hal" said he, "Troth I know not what I am, or rightly who I am!" And with hasty steps like one distraught he continued to pace to and fro the tent while a man might count an hundred. Suddenly turning to me—

"Tell me Hal," cried he "am I a boy! a whipster? a fool? Come, answer quickly! am I? am I?"

"My Lord" said I, "my Lord! who dares say such things of your Lordship?"

"I asked you not who says them, but I asked you am I? Now in honesty and fair speaking, as a friend and not a servant, tell me—am I such a poor, sickly, puling thing?"

"No my Lord" replied I readily, "nor ever

were, not even when in age you were but a stripling."

"Then why is it Hal—expound me this, Oh excellent Oracle, if you can—why is it that what disturbs not other men—soldiers, God-fearing gentlemen—disturbs me. Disturbs? aye sickens me! fills my soul with loathing, so that my senses seem to cry out with one accord, and my very stomach heaves as 'twere like to vomit."

"You speak, my Lord," said I hesitatingly, "of yon ugly sight we just left behind us in the wood?"

"Aye Hal, of that and of many another ugly sight that hath met me since I set foot in this thrice-cursed, infested, sin-beridden land of Ireland! But, since I assuredly made not its troubles, why, I ask, should I heed them, seeing that others trouble themselves not with the same? My father—God rest his soul—put a score daily to the sword where I have put one. Did he sleep the worse for it? or was his soul when he came to die perturbed on that account? Not so, he parted calmly as a Christian man should, at peace with God and all the world. My lord Grey—who would fain, as 'twas said, have made a Mahometan conquest of this whole island, and

have dyed its very seas red with the blood of its people—was his soul burdened on that account? Not so again! rather he counted what he did well pleasing in the sight of the Almighty, they being not alone such rank Papists, but the sworn friends and abettors of the king of Spain. Nay, if he repented of ought, 'twas that he had not, while chance favoured him, rid the earth of more such forward caitiffs! Then, why I ask you Hal, should I—saving for some womanish weakness or folly that I carry from my mother—feel thus perturbed and sickened by what other men heed not?"

"Your nature, my Lord" said I, "is of a more poetic texture than was that of my lord Grey, or even of the late illustrious Nobleman your father, and poetic natures as they have higher joys than others, so they have this disadvantage in dealing with the grosser things of life that many crosses, unheeded of rougher souls, jar and fret them, as small unevennesses in a palette disagree with tender skins, yet hurt not the coarser ones."

"Pish Hal!" cried he impatiently, "thy apology, worthy friend, savours of the courtier, and of courtiers, God wot, we have enough and to spare! And for this daintiness with which your politeness endows me, 'twould never sure for a moment

compare with that of the illustrious poet, incomparable knight, and flower of all chivalry, Sir Walter Raleigh, who, an he be not greatly maligned, did such deeds in this very forest in which we be standing, that 'tis marvel the trees carry not his sign-manual written in blood upon their trunks as a memorial for ever! Nay, believe me, we deceive ourselves grossly with such words, attributing to the finer side of us what is far oftener some humour of the blood, some defect in our bodily structures, than any such over fineness of mind or spirit. Certes 'twas no air-fraught daintiness such as you would ascribe to me, but a plain honest heaving of the stomach that overtook me when yonder bloody-fingered knave tumbled out his spoils with such glee, and the blood ran in a red rain to our feet. But enough! The fit is past! No more o' it, in God's name! no more! Go bid the trumpeters sound; 'tis time we were on the march. Essex is himself again, and will let no more such whimsical follies—born perchance like goblins or pookas out of the quagmires and pestilential swamps of this unhealthy land—come between him and aught that he has to do. What! shall fifty naked rascals be slaughtered in their sleep, and our Excellency's stomach turn at it! A truce upon such folly!

Forward! and the devil take any traitorous bile that would dare rise and spoil our appetite again upon so pitiful an occasion!"

Yet, though his Lordship so spake, and though throughout the rest of that day he was cheerful above his common, I, who know the thoughts of his heart, perceived that a secret distaste still clung to him, and that much, that to another would be but customary, was to him irksome almost above the bearing. Moreover it seemed to me, as I watched him closely, that he set his thoughts ever more and more from that day towards getting rid of this uneasy governance, and returning with all speed to England, to which resolution I, alas! in no small degree ascribe much that afterwards befel, nay much which—save God in his Good Providence do avert it—may yet be to befal.

XIII

NOW falls it to my unhappy lot, (I being a true, if humble historian, and not a mere dresser-up of pretty lies like some who undertake that office) to recount the deep disgrace and sore mishap which befel her Majesty's troops under the command of Sir Henry Harrington, the news of which was brought to us in this wise.

Leaving the thickest part of the forest, my Lord marched to Affane on the Broad water, through a great pass by Lisfynnen. And at Affane we had to cross a ford, which is only passable one hour before and one hour after low water, and so came to a village two miles short of Dungarvan, where we halted for the night. Here a council was held in his Lordship's tent to consider the fittest manner of pushing on the war in Munster, the President thereof, who sat that day at his Excellency's right hand, vehemently urging the setting up of a sufficient number of garrisons. "For by garrisons only" said he, "the heart of

these rebels is to be broken." This advice being by the rest of the council approved, and the garrisons agreed upon, the council broke up, his Lordship remaining awhile longer to conclude the signing of certain instructions for those who were to depart next day to their charges. Suddenly, while he still sat there, a loud noise and disturbance was heard without, and one was seen running hastily toward the tent, having his dress disordered from hard riding, and his boots splashed with mud up to the knees.

Him the sentries that had charge of the entrance of the tent would have forbad to go in, but he cried out with a loud voice that he must and would speak to the Lord Lieutenant, and that he came charged with urgent tidings to him from Sir Henry Harrington.

Hearing this his Excellency himself turned round, demanding to know what he had to say; whereupon the man, without speaking, thrust into his hand a small roll of paper, which was not a proper letter, but rather a wisp or loose twist of paper, as if one had snatched up the first thing that came to hand and written upon it. This my Lord took and began to read, glancing back as he did so at the messenger. But no sooner

had he cast eyes upon the first words than he leaped from his seat, and the blood flew to his face in a great rush, and his eyes lit up, as do the eyes of an eagle, and—

"Fellow!" cried he with a loud voice, and with that made a step forward as if he would have taken him by the throat. Suddenly stopping himself—

"Where gat you that?" he asked, striking the paper violently with his hand as he spoke.

"From Sir Henry Harrington, my Lord" answered the man boldly.

"You lie, Sirrah!" shouted his Excellency furiously.

"I lie not my Lord; he bade me make all speed, and deliver it straight into your Lordship's own hands."

"You lie, I say! you lie! 'Sdeath! it cannot be! He dares not! 'Fore God! he dares not! Defeated! and no reason given! Defeated, and with every advantage of ground and numbers! Defeated! and by a crew of ragged Irish kernes and runagates! Fled from the field, leaving his baggage and wounded behind him! Hell and Furies! 'tis impossible! 'Tis too monstrous an invention! Speak fellow! Some enemy hath be-

guiled this into thee. Speak I say! Confess that 'tis a lie, and I will forgive thee."

"'Tis no lie, my Lord" answered the other sturdily. "'Tis the very Gospel truth, and I who speak to your Lordship know it to be so. And for those advantages of which your Lordship speaks, had you seen as I did that Devil's Spawn of Irish rushing out of the rocks, and falling upon our men ere half of them knew what had chanced, or could get their weapons ready, you had scarce said that, no, nor marvelled that they were overtaken with terror, seeing that they were but men, after all, and not wizards or magicians, such as 'twould take to cope with such a Satan's brood, the very sight and hellish noises whereof were enough to scare any Christian man!"

"Silence cur!" shouted his Excellency. "What thou white-blooded slave and traitor! art not ashamed to stand there and openly defend such cowardice? Ho guards, seize, bind, and carry him away! Let none have communication with him lest this contamination spread. As I am a Christian 'tis enough to make any one believe the very air of this country to be bewitched, so that it exhales treason as a marsh exhales vapours! That a man should be found to stand up—

untouched in body and limb—and openly avow such cowardice! By my oath, if the Queen have many more of that kidney in her Irish army 'twere a plain alms to hang 'em!"

Then there was a great hasting to and fro, the Council having to be newly assembled, several of its members being dispersed, and needing to be recalled to decide what was to be done. And that night 5 companies of foot and 2 of horse were despatched in all haste to see what had in truth befallen Sir Henry Harrington, and to rally those troops which had got dispersed through the country.

His Lordship meantime with the main body moved on into the lord Poer's country, and thence to Waterford, where they camped within 3 miles of that city. But, when the messengers sent by the officer in command returned, they brought word that matters were even as the first messenger had said; nay 'twas worse than he reported, many of the soldiers under Sir Henry Harrington having not only lost all discipline, but being filled with terror beyond reason, had fled madly away, tearing off their uniforms and throwing down their weapons lest they should betray them; and had hidden themselves in rocks and holes of the earth,

not daring to venture out till the troops sent in search of them appeared, whereupon they gladly rendered themselves up, though knowing that they would receive the punishment of their cowardice, yet preferring to die by their comrades' hands, than to be starved to death, or fall into the hands of the rebels, of whose cruelty they stood in such exceeding dread.

Having received the reports of this matter, and commanded that those who had so dishonoured themselves and disgraced the name of soldier should be sent to Dublin, there to be kept until his return, when a Court Martial would sit upon them, his Excellency set himself to review her Majesty's magazines of victual and munition at Waterford. And this done, upon the 22nd of June, he set forth from that town, and came to Passage, a village so called because it is beside the ferry leading from the county of Waterford into the county of Wexford. Here he had commanded all the boats of Waterford, Rosse and the Carick to be gathered together to transport the army across. But because the place was very wide, the number of boats small, and the carriage far greater than had ever been seen before in this country with so few fighting men, there was great difficulty

and much delay, so that by night-time only a small portion of the horse were got across.

What added no little to the difficulty was that the weather, which for a week past had been very bad, upon that day exceeded all that ever I saw for wetness, the rain coming down in torrents, so that many thought that Noah's Deluge must have come again, and much of the baggage was lost, and several of the horses killed through slipping and falling upon the wet rocks. And whether this unhappy affair of Sir Henry Harrington had daunted the spirit of the army; or whether it was from the great rain, by means of which not a man walked dry, but lived soaked to the skin from the time he set forth in the morning till he came to the camping ground at night; or from the badness of the roads, which were not in truth roads but blind tracks; or from the want of proper food, and the great difficulty of cooking it, so that the men were often forced to swallow their meat raw; or from the increasing prevalence of sickness; or whatever else the reason may have been, certain it is that from that time forth a great dissatisfaction took possession of the troops, many even who were of much higher rank than the common soldiery, scrupling not to complain;

saying that they had accompanied his Excellency from England to win honour and renown, and not to be starved to death, or drowned with rain, or lost in foul and noisome bog holes, or shot by naked savages from behind rocks, and many other such-like unreasonable and unsoldierly complaints. And as straws will sometimes shew how the wind bloweth, when bulkier objects are a less good index, so I will here set down a conversation which I heard between two of the foot soldiers not far from Ballybrenan, as we were on the way to Wicklow.

That night, it being not only exceedingly wet, but also blowing a great gale of wind, it chanced that on my way to his Lordship's tent I was forced to shelter myself against a hedge, or rather a sort of thorn-grown thicket, till the violence of the storm had a little abated. And as I stood there I presently perceived that two of the sentries, whose duty it was to remain in the open, had also taken refuge from the storm upon the other side of the same thicket, and were crouched upon the ground, muttering one to another, not having observed my coming, owing to the rain and wind, which filled both their ears and their eyes.

"A murrain upon this Irish expedition!" one

said to the other, "a murrain upon it, and upon those that sent us on't! May I be a heathen if I know what it is to have a dry rag to my back, or a bit of whole skin to my toes. Zounds, man, an't were not for this rain which would put out all the fires ever Satan lighted, I would swear we must by this time have got to the very gates of Hell, if no i' th' inside of Hell itself."

"Aye, that would I, that would I too, Timothy Nuthatch," muttered the other. "The devil take Irish wars one and all, say I. What with early starts and late marches I am a garron if I have not a'most forgotten the very look o' roast meat! How many times since we set out from Dublin has my belly been so flat and pinched after an hour's walking that I ha' been fain to snatch at the filthy berries growing out of the hedge side, or to pick a sallet of green herbs as I skirted a ditch back, and what sort of food, I ask you, is a sallet of green herbs to put into the inside of a man, save to chill his stomach further this cold and colicky weather?"

"Aye, aye," muttered the first, "'tis little they that ride at their ease care how the foot-soldier fares. And further I tell you, Bill Bradshaw, that——"

With this he sunk his voice so low that I heard naught, only the curses that broke from them from time to time, and the grunts and groans of their complaining, more like filthy swine than men and soldiers. And the rain having somewhat abated, I passed on, thinking within myself that no amount of conduct in the commander, nor yet of courage in the better soldiery, will avail much when the main bulk of an army is made up of such soft and brabbling stuff as this, which be scarce fit to carry the munition of true warriors. And of this I soon after had a most fit proof and illustration. For only the very next day, being assailed on our road by a small party of the rebels near Enniscorthy, I saw these two fellows, Timothy Nuthatch and Bill Bradshaw run past as 'twere for the bare life, their pikes flung down, their garments awry, and they themselves looking back at the Irish that followed, as if the very Arch-fiend himself with a Garrisonfull of Devils were at their heels. And but for the sudden resolution of Colonel Fellowes, who—being at the time somewhat in the rear—got upon a whin-bank, and called out loudly that he would himself shoot dead the first man who passed him, thereby catching them betwixt two fires, it might readily

have befallen that the alarm thus kindled, would have spread throughout the whole army.

For this sort of blind terror or panic is in truth of the very nature of a Conflagration, which being caught by one substance spreads to another, and so to the next and the next till all be consumed. Nor, when once 'tis established, does it need any real or present peril to produce it, but the veriest fancy, and image of danger—nay the harmless falling of a stone, or the innocent report of a pith gun —will suffice to awaken it, when off they go, helter skelter, like a flock of sheep, swearing, crying out, falling one against another, striking, wounding, aye even pressing one another to death in their madness. So that at last they bring upon themselves that peril which at first was nothing but a sort of Conjuration, emitted by their own flat and dastardly spirits.

Upon which subject, as upon many others which this campaign has brought before my mind, I might readily here fill many pages, yet will I forbear to do so, fearing to fatigue the reader, the readier that larger and weightier matters do beckon us steadily forward into the Future.

XIV

AT a council held by his Excellency at Enniscorthy it was decided we should not go by the Duffrey — which is the commonest road to Dublin—the reason being that the ways there were known to be all plashed, but by Fernes and Arklow, and should march in the strongest and swiftest order we could, seeing that these Leinster rebels were certainly out in great force, of whom the most important, I was told, were the Kavenaghs, the O'Byrnes, the O'Tooles, the O'Connor Falys, the O'Mores of Leix, with some of the lesser traitors of Low Leinster and their bonnaghts.

The chief cause of delay, and main impediment to our march both now and ever since we left Dublin was the great train of churles, horse boys, and such unserviceable people with which our army was clogged. For the number of these "*Black Guards*" (so called because with them travel the cooks, with their pots, pans and other kitchen gear) was said to be nearly a third of the whole army.

Most of these were, by his Excellency's orders, left behind at Arklow, so that with a lighter running camp he might more readily attempt the rebels; and, having passed the ford nigh to that place, he pushed on along the higher ground, the rebels, (fearing ever to be taken upon a good champion field!) keeping upon our left hand side, and somewhat nearer to the sea.

It was close to this town of Arklow that a great disaster was nigh happening through the fault of the guides, they having carried the Earl of Ormonde with the Marshal and the Vanguard along the sea shore, where, the ground being low, they could see neither the country around them nor their own wings, so that the rebels got between them and the main body. Fortunately his Excellency, having just then mounted to the top of one of the hills that stood near, perceived the rebel force, some nine hundred strong, marching to cut off our carriage and the left wing. Sending therefore to the rearward for three hundred of the lightest foot and all the horse, he, with the Earl of Southampton and others, galloped swiftly down hill to the rescue of our men, who were like to have been cut in pieces. At this the rebels, who were just then crossing a bog, [having a low wood

in front of it and sand hills in the rear], stopped short, but seeing the small number of our men, they came on again with great speed, uttering the most frightful, heathenish, and soul-terrifying noises. Whereupon the Earl of Southampton, who was given the command of the horse, gave them a charge so resolute that he drave them back upon the wood, and, entering after them, followed them right up to the bog, by means of which Captain Constable, Mr Cox and some others, who had followed too eagerly, got bogged, and were forced to quit their horses, Mr Cox being badly wounded by a chance shot.

For the foot soldiers they again shewed a very different spirit from the horse, displaying the most shameful terror at the approach of the rebels, crying out to one another that they were certainly Devils, for that they could see red and fiery horns rising up out of their heads, with other such-like cries of amazement, most lamentable and unsoldier-like to hear. Fortunately the rebels, delaying for their main body to approach, gave our horsemen from the rearward also time to come up, who, charging boldly, drove them back across the bog, and so up against the Earl of Southampton, who again repulsed them, whereupon they

fled in great disorder, many throwing away their arms, and some getting in their turn stuck in the bog, where they were overtaken and killed by our men, who followed the pursuit with great diligence, although at a disadvantage, being so much more heavily clad and accoutered than those they were pursuing.

The pursuit being at length over, towards four of the clock one of the chiefs, called the O'Connor Faly, sent a follower to his Lordship to crave permission to speak with him about conditions. The same came to us at Arklow, where his Excellency had just entered a house. Whom, when the officers without perceived, they would have cut him down. But his Lordship, hearing of his coming, gave orders that he should be allowed to enter, which he did, and came forward clad in the Irish dress, with woollen trews of a striped pattern, his *bratt* about his shoulders, his arms bare, wearing a lip-beard, his forelocks long, and hanging over his eyes in a tangled mass. A larger-bodied man I have rarely seen, nor one of a more dour aspect, rising over six feet in height, and standing there (although alone, his friends newly dispersed, and himself surrounded by so many gleaming swords which ached to find themselves in his vitals,) with

a look as haughty and a carriage as dauntless as though we had been his vassals, and he our Prince and Better.

Finding that he knew no English, an interpreter was sent for to enquire his errand, whereupon he told that this O'Connor Faly craved to speak with the Lord Lieutenant, but only on condition of a safe conduct to come and go. To which his Excellency replied that if O'Connor Faly came as a repentant rebel, without arms, offering himself in absolute submission to Her Majesty he might do so, and have a safe conduct, but that if he came in other guise or for any other purpose, he should have none, and that as for the next messenger he would be hanged. This being repeated in Irish to the man, he replied haughtily in his own tongue that O'Connor Faly would come in no such way, nor for any such purpose, and so saying turned himself round, and strode resolutely out of the house. At which some of the younger captains standing by would have gone after him and cut him down, but his Excellency forbade it, and so the man got clear away.

This happened at Arklow, where my Lord lay that night, and the day following we marched to Wicklow, and encamped three miles short of it,

close to the place where Sir Henry Harrington's disaster befel, and from thence shaped our course direct to Dublin.

Shortly after leaving Arklow we entered a valley very pleasing of appearance, the name of which I was told was the Vale of Avoca, which methought had a melodious sound, such as might fitly find place in some sonnet or madrigal, were a poet moved to indite one upon such a place, which I can scarce suppose, seeing that he would prefer to leave it to its brutish obscurity. The hills, though high, were not so lofty as to be displeasing, being well clothed with verdure to the top, the woods having a park-like aspect, so that one gazing at them and not knowing where he was, might have said—"Sure, this is the estate of some noble Lord or worthy Gentleman, who hath planted these fair mounts, and laid out these woods to walk in, yea and directed these sparkling rivulets, which fall with so pleasant a sound over the rocks?" Natheless no Gentleman or Nobleman of a surety had ought to do with it; only Nature, who being a woman and therefore unaccountable, will as readily endow a region given over to godless runagates like these O'Byrnes as one inhabited by a more God-fearing and obedient people. For since the

first coming of the English these O'Byrnes of Wicklow have been a sore plague and offence, so that the whole region Stinketh in the Nostrils of all that be sent to govern Ireland, having bred more notable rebels than any other part, unless it be the Kingdom, (as of the ignorant it is called) of Kerry.

At our last halting place before entering Dublin, his Lordship lodged in the house of one Mr Barker. Yet, though his quarters here were of unwonted ease and dryness, he was much plagued with the ague, and with darting pains in the lower limbs, so that he could gain no sleep. Accordingly he called to me, who lay near him, and desired that I would repeat some verses, either of Edmund Spenser or some other of our recent poets, so that by the power of well-linked words his spirit might be wooed to slumber.

"Alas, my Lord," said I, "gladly would I do so, but, as I have oft told your Lordship, my memory is of that defective quality that for very shame I durst never repeat the poesy of any other man, fearing lest his thoughts and melody suffer some injury at my hands."

"Repeat me then some of thine own, most

musical of Hals," quoth he, smiling, "some sonnet or roundelay, and the cheerfuller the better; only, as you love me, not one of those dolorous love ditties of thine, which be altogether too sorrowful for a man whose days are at best none of the cheerfullest."

So, being set to this task (which in truth and without vanity, I would have avoided), I bethought what I had that were best suited to the occasion.

"Would your Lordship," said I, "be pleased to hear an hunting song, which I have writ and composed not long since?"

"An hunting song! Why, gladly!" cried he, "that were the very thing! Some merry rousing strain, to carry my thoughts from all that oppresses them here. I knew not, my dolorous Hal, you had any such in your wallet, and am the better pleased."

"For mirthfulness I know not that it be greatly of that complexion, my Lord," said I, "but such as it is your Lordship shall hear, and judge for yourself."

Then I began to rehearse the following verses, of which there were altogether forty-seven, but the whole I give not.

HUNTING SONG

When beached streams run thick and slow,
And efts upclimb, with oosy slime,
And only marish blossoms blow,
Then comes the merry hunting time,
Blow! blow! the merry hunting time.

When all the ways are dark and brown,
And not a bird uplifts its strain,
And leaves come circling slowly down,
Then starts the merry hunting train,
Blow! blow! the merry hunting train.

When rain-drops stand on every ledge,
And, all forlorn, the forests mourn,
And daily starker grows the hedge,
Then sounds the merry hunting horn,
Blow! blow! the merry hunting horn.

When Time the gold with grey replaces,
And mocks with scorn the hues of morn,
And thins the long-remembered faces,
Then sounds the merry hunting horn,
Blow! blow! the merry hunting horn.

* * * * * *

"Now by St Hubert!" cried his Excellency, starting up from where he lay. "This hunting song of thine, good Hal, is the dolefullest doleful ditty that ever yet I heard. Not another verse an' you love me! So help me all good lovers

of sport 'twere enough to make any one drown himself in sheer despite, and of drowning we ha' enough in this clime without it. Take it not unkindly, man, that I make short work of thy remaining verses. Some other time, when all goes well, and our spirits, being too boisterous, need chastisement, I will apply to thee for the remainder, but at present — abstain, good Hal! Abstain!"

"Verily, my Lord," said I, somewhat mortified, "I feared as much, and warned you of the same ere I began. For, as your Lordship is aware, that which proceeds out of a man, whether it be prose or in poesy, is apt to be of the same complexion as the man himself, and my thoughts of late have been but of a dolorous hue."

"I know it, good Hal," said he, "and think not the worst of thee, rather the better. Natheless I must pray your forgiveness for cutting short these same mournful warblings of thine, seeing that the listening to many more in the same strain would in my present mood be not unlike pouring water down the throat of a man new pulled out of a river!"

This conversation—though pertaining rather to the domain of private than public interest—I here

offer to the reader, not from any satisfaction which it gives me to repeat these poor verses of mine own invention, but simply because my Lord gave me such strict charge to write down everything that befel upon our journey, the lighter matters, no less than the graver. For the same reason, and because of the closeness of my attendance on him, I find that mine own slighter concerns tend to get as it were mixed and interfused with his, so that 'tis difficult for me to disentangle one from the other—although to allow such a thing savours, I know, of irreverence. Which explanation given, I would further entreat the reader's permission to record yet another conversation which took place somewhat before this time, and which I then spake not of, though it wrought in me no little trouble, and even now the remembrance lies like lead upon a soul that was none too jocund before.

It befel in this wise. It chanced that a gentleman, by name Mr Allardice, had ridden from Dublin with letters to my Lord, and came into the camp. Whom shortly after his arrival, I, entering into conversation with him, begged to inform me of all that had befallen since our departure, which he obligingly did, relating, amongst

other matters, how that the young Burke of Clanrickard—upon whose behalf I had interceded with his Excellency—had recently been released from his fetters, though still kept in custody as a matter of precaution.

"And Mistress Agatha Usher," I enquired, endeavouring to speak in careless wise, yet my heart bumping up and down the while in my breast, like some poor bird's that is caught in the hand of a fowler. "How doth that gracious and modest maiden? I trust well, but have heard naught of her since our first setting forth."

"For well," said Mr Allardice, "I doubt not she is well enough, and modest too I hope, as gentlewomen go, but Mistress Usher is she no longer, for she was married some three weeks since to young Mr Oliver Morrison, eldest son to Sir Richard Morrison, newly made knight by his Excellency, and as I am informed, a pretty springal, of no small parts and promise. But God-a-mercy, Master Secretary! what ails you? You look as linen-cheeked as though you were about to swoon! Pray God you be not seized with this country's sickness, which is so plaguey rife at this season. If so, a cup of aniseed water,

with a few toasted crabs in it, is of excellent efficacy, or could you get it, some of the right Origanum, finely powdered, with six drops of distilled Dragon's blood, is even yet more sovereign, but that I fear is scarce procurable in this outlandish region."

"Nay, 'tis nothing," said I, "only a sudden vertigo or gidyness to which I am subject from a boy. I will but take a few turns in the air, and 'twill presently pass off."

"Do so; do so," cried he, "for indeed you look but poorly."

"And is it thus?" said I to myself when I was alone. "Is it thus, Oh thou poor, weak, believing Fool! that thou again findest thyself cast off, disappointed, and left forlorn? Verily 'tis enough for thee to set heart upon some hope, for that hope to be forthwith quenched, darkened, and lost in the common clouds. Was it for this, that thou and that False Fair One did hold together such sweet and harmonious discourse? For this that thou did'st nurse her image within thy breast, ever turning to it as to a ray of sunshine in a dark and lonesome land? For this that thy heart hath so leaped ever since thy steps have begun to turn Dublin-wards? Go to, Fool, and know that

Woman is, and hath been from the beginning of time but a rainbow, and a twinkling delusion, ever beckoning on a man with soft words and softer looks, till—her purpose being gained—she leave him but the darker and the more blinded for her deceitfulness."

And, my thoughts being thus worked upon began presently to resolve themselves into the fashion of a sonnet, which sonnet I insert, not, I would again assure the reader, from any uneasy vanity, (that being, as all are aware, at no time a malady of mine) but because when a man is truly and by his constitution a Poet, then poesy—being the natural fruit of his soul—giveth a livelier image of his thoughts than can hope to be compassed by him in plain prose. And this sonnet ran as follows:—

TO A FALSE AND FICKLE FAIR

As morning mists, with tender blandishment,
Kiss some sad hill upon its sad cold brow,
Then, melting off with slow evanishment,
Leave what was barren erst more barren now.
As thin-veined leaves, led on by odorous May,
O'er some bare trunk a flickering verdure shed,
Then, wooed by boisterous Autumn, slip away
Leaving its bareness yet more sere and dead.

As ocean waves, a frolic company,
With leap on leap cover the cold brown sands,
Then with one huddling impulse seaward flee,
And what was naked erst more naked stands.
So to my grief-filled heart False Fair art thou,
And what was GLOOM before, is THRICE GLOOM now!

Being thus poetically delivered, my soul felt somewhat easier. For poetry has in it of the nature of a Cataplasm, or Poultice, which when laid upon a sore place sucketh from it its worst poison, and leaveth it less like to cause mortification. Yet was I still beset with many grievous thoughts, so that with sundry sighs and not a few salt tears I ruefully watered the road to Dublin, in which town it was no little solace to me to find that my Lord purposed taking up his residence in the Castle, and not in the house of Mr Usher, the very sight of which house would have been to me as is the sight of some chalice or goblet—no matter how finely it may be gilt—to one who has drunk from it some Nauseous Draught, the remembrance of which still clings like the flavour of bitter aloes about his lips.

XV

HARDLY had he set foot in Dublin than my Lord was forced to surrender himself into the charge of the physicians, in whose hands he lay several days, suffering many things of them both internally and externally. The which doings, if they relieved him little, (nay, so far as I could observe, increased his maladies) at least gave great satisfaction to those gentlemen, he being the First in this land, and they at that time somewhat scant of patients.

While still beholden to them for these services he was likewise forced (so great was the pressure upon his time) to receive and answer a number of letters from all parts of Ireland, as well as to entertain many suitors, which he did, lying in his bed, and endeavouring as best he could in that position, to give them both his attention and their satisfaction.

Nor were these the worst of the burdens laid upon him, for it was at this time that letters

began to reach him in large numbers from her Majesty and from the English Council, touching events recently befallen; which letters, (I say it in all reverence for the greatness of their writers!) were not of a nature either to calm or to hearten a sick man, especially one to whom the voice of reproof has been from childhood as is the touch of a spur to the flanks of a gallant but over mettlesome steed.

For of the many who in times past had declared their love for my Lord, there were at this time as I understood but three whose affection could be relied upon, namely,—The Lord Keeper Egerton, the most Reverent Archbishop John Whitgift, and his Lordship's uncle, good Sir William Knollys the Comptroller, who of late, they say, rarely attendeth Council. For the rest, their great aim seemed to be how best to thwart my Lord, and most to mis-report and mis-represent his actions, so that whatever he did, that, in their opinion was the thing he ought not to have done.

Thus on the occasion of the Court Martial held upon the officers and soldiers under Sir Henry Harrington, my Lord decided with regard to that knight himself—he being a member of the Irish Council—that he should not be

brought to judgment till the Queen's pleasure about him should be known. For the common soldiers it was at first proposed, of those clearly proved to have shown cowardice, that the whole should be put to death, a punishment which my Lord of his own motion and pity afterwards reduced, commanding that they should cast dice amongst themselves, and that only one in ten, he upon whom the lot fell, should be executed.

So accordingly it was done, those upon whom the lot fell being shot, the rest standing by and being returned to prison after the execution was over. Now this—though clearly a mitigation and tenderness—was, I heard, loudly cried out against by the Queen's Council; nay the very Pick-thanks and common Newsmongers, (of which these idle times see so many) complained against it, scrupling not to say that my Lord did it to cause terror, and to exalt his own office, wishing to king it over here in Ireland. So that, as he himself said, he was required to be at once Lord Authority, and Lord Mockery, a seeming solid substance, but in reality only hung out in these Irish wastes as a Puppet of the State, as men hang mawkins in beanfields, which, though without

arms or legs, yet, being blown about by the wind, seem at a distance to move and to be endowed with life.

In the same way it is, I hear, loudly complained of in England that his Excellency has given away too much of the confiscated lands, and has been over free also with the honour of knighthood. Yet do we, who are upon the spot, know that such complaints are but as the sighing of a summer breeze in comparison to the loud outcries made in Ireland by those who have expected such rewards, but received none. Especially those that would possess themselves of the confiscated lands being so vehement and clamorous in their supplications that my Lord at this time could scarce ride along the streets of Dublin for the noise of their importunities. And more than once he complained of the same in my hearing, nor was I surprised, such covetousness being so contrary to his own nature that he could scarce credit it in others.

"Pardieu! what I wonder would they have?" cried he. "Do they wish me to cut up my own body into pieces for them? Can I—that am but one man, and a subject to boot—carve out kingdoms, lordships, counties, large and fertile

estates and properties, and all that such a crew of leeches may batten and grow fat upon them at their pleasure? Have the gluttons never bethought them that they are men, and must die therefore, like their betters? 'Fore God! one would almost believe that they alone were to cheat Sir Worm, and to batten till the day of Doom upon the lands of other, and perchance not very much worse men! Not a parcel of land, a patch of bog, no nor so much as a paltry sheep-walk going in this country but fifty of these land-beggars, who would elsewhere be earning their own livelihood, clamour after it, yelping and hoiting like a pack of hounds, or like those many-legged vermin the caterpillar worms, that thirst to get hold of some goodly garment, though, when they have it, they use it for no better purpose than to stuff out their own hollow insides with it."

"Faith, my Lord," I answered on that occasion, "I remember to have heard it said, or seen it writ somewhere, that no roaring lion is so savage or clamorous as an hungry office-seeker or petitioner when he is baulked of his prey."

"A lion, Hal! Wrong not the poor beast by any such comparison!" cried he, "Vermin! vermin, I call them! and ugly, crawling vermin to boot! I

swear to you since I have been in Ireland I have met with but one man who has not straightway begged some post or some piece of land from me, and that man was Sir Conyers Clifford."

"That, my Lord," said I, "I can well believe. Nor are there many that in my humble opinion can compare with Sir Conyers, both for generosity of nature, or for conduct when in the field. Hath your Lordship, I pray you, heard lately from that good knight, for meseems 'tis a long time since he was last reported of."

"I do expect to hear of him hourly," replied his Excellency. "And at present, as I understand, he should be to the north of the county of Mayo, and by the first or second of next month I look to him to join me at the Navan, there to aid in the assembling of the forces which are to take the field against Tyrone."

This conversation, as I but too clearly recall, befel upon a Thursday, and the very next day but one, being a Saturday, I was writing in the ante-room to the presence chamber, when I heard my Lord coming hastily up the stairs, and, looking round, saw a terrible look upon his face, which told me without questioning that some new and yet more direful disaster had befallen.

And the minute he caught sight of me he cried with a loud voice, "Hal, Hal! Sir Conyers Clifford is slain!"

"For the love of God, my Lord, say not so!" exclaimed I, leaping to my feet. "Sure how can that be? Hath he already encountered Tyrone, and the other chief enemies from the North?"

"No, Hal, he hath been slain at a place called the Curlews in Mayo by a crew of O'Rourkes and O'Donnells, and all that were with him are put to flight or slaughtered, and Sir Alexander Ratcliffe is also dead, and the rebels have possession of the bodies of them both!"

Then I was the more troubled, knowing how the heads and limbs of rebels are set up in all public places in Ireland, and fearing greatly that when they in their turn had got possession of the bodies of two such honourable gentlemen as Sir Conyers Clifford and Sir Alexander Ratcliffe they would assuredly work despite upon their remains, if only in revenge of the like dealing. In this, however, 'twas after found that the rascals showed a better spirit than might have been expected, for they disposed of them both fittingly, giving them honourable burial in a Christian churchyard, as we were informed.

But my Lord strode to and fro the room, as his wont is when disturbed. And every minute he broke into fresh anger and fresh lamentations, clenching his hands, and striking upon the ground with his foot.

"The Curlews!" cried he, "What in God's name is the Curlews? Who ever heard of the Curlews? Is that a place for a knight of fame and daring to be overthrown and slain? Some demon sure must overhang this land and all that come into it, else't could never arrive that a noble knight and an accomplished captain should be overcome by a crew of rogues, and halter-sacks, without for the most part shoe to foot, coat to back, or knowledge and understanding of arms!"

Then—pausing suddenly in his going—he smote his two hands together, crying out, "Death and the Devil! now too, when every man that can put foot to ground, or leg in stirrup must be gathered together for this Northern enterprise. Were it not for that assuredly I would go myself and avenge him. Aye, would I, Sir Conyers, and, as God is my witness, would wreak a right bloody revenge for this your slaying!"

Hearing him so speak, I too felt that, (little of a warrior as I am by profession) I had gladly

myself taken sword and shield for the avenging of that good knight, the remembrance of whose kindness to me and to my dear lad Francis Gardner, was like a two-edged dart in my side, so that but for shame I might have played the woman, it irked me so to think of him lying there, dead, cold, and unshriven in a savage land, and 'mid fierce and wolfish foes.

What, even more than his death itself, troubled me, and what I could not forbear reflecting upon, was that this second disaster, coming, as it did, so close upon the great scandal and disgrace of Sir Henry Harrington's defeat in Wicklow, would surely work my Lord sore harm, he having so many enemies, and they so loud and clamorous against him. But of this he himself seemingly thought little, though in all the years I have known him, and of all the deaths, both through sickness and in the tented field, with which his path hath been beset, I have never known him so afflicted by any death as by this one, so that for several nights after this he would even in his sleep start up suddenly, crying out the name of Sir Conyers, and of that woeful place the Curlews, and of all that there befel.

This going on some time, I being witness of

his affliction, began to fear that it might work in him some lasting injury. As indeed it probably would have done, but that in this land of Ireland (however few its other merits) this one clear and absolute advantage must be admitted to it, which is that no man will ever have time to grow very sick or desperate there upon a single Trouble, seeing that in a brief space of time he may be quite sure that it will be overtaken and driven from his mind by some other and yet worse one, ever following close after it, and treading hard upon its heels!

XVI

BY what evil enchantment it befel that, having at the onset as 'twas said numbered nearly nineteen thousand men both of horse and foot, the army under his Excellency had by this time so dwindled—what with sickness, losses in the field, the supplying of garrisons, and such like causes—as scarce to reckon four thousand,—and that after fresh reinforcements had been sent from England—I, being no soldier, dare not declare. Enough that so 'twas, and, being so reduced, and the new levies so poor in quality, and the recent terror of a Spanish Landing so fresh in all men's minds, it was openly said of many in the Irish Council that 'twere better not to attempt any Northern enterprise this season, but, remaining in Dublin, have all in readiness to take the field early upon the ensuing spring.

That his Excellency would give no ear to this counsel all who know him will believe. And

although, through the defection of many, [and through that ill hap which like some envious influence has dogged his steps ever since he set foot in Ireland], it was scarce to be hoped that any great advantage would be obtained, still, even to confront the Arch-traitor, and oblige him to recognise some power greater than his own frowardness and insolence, were in itself clearly no light or unworthy enterprise.

This being decided upon, and the Rendezvous, as 'tis called, of the army being appointed to be at the Navan, upon the 28th day of August his Excellency rode out from Dublin, and, taking with him an escort of an hundred horse, slept that night at Ardbrackan, an house of the lord Bishop of Meath.

Next day he met the whole army upon the hill of Clyth, which is about half a mile from Kells, and the night following encamped at Castle Keran, where he was forced to remain till the victuals from Dredagh[1] overtook him. These having at last arrived he marched the army towards Fermoy, and lodged it between Robertstown and Newcastle, and the following day, the 3rd of September, moved thence to Ardee,

[1] *Drogheda.*

where for the first time we came within sight of Tyrone, he being camped out here with all his forces upon a hill about a mile and a half from our quarters, having only a river and wood between him and us.

Now so soon as 'twas reported of the Avaunt guard that Tyrone was within sight, immediately there ran through the whole army a great stir, buzz, and commotion, this Arch-traitor having been the mark at which our aim had been set ever since his Excellency first came to Ireland, and he being so much spoken of, yet hitherto seen but of few, and of those not recently. His Excellency was himself more eager to meet him than was the youngest man under arms, so hastened the troops forward, and embattled them that day in force upon the hill by the burnt castle of Ardee. Finding that there was no wood for firing save in the valleys towards Tyrone's quarter, he presently commanded that a squadron from each company should go out and fetch it in, and sent 500 foot and 2 companies of horse to be their guard; whereupon Tyrone sent out some of his men to offer battle, but after a while directed them not to pass the ford, ours being so resolved to dispute it. At this first meeting some slight skirmishing took

place from one side of the river to the other, but to no great purpose, for as they offended us little, so we troubled ourselves little about them.

Next day we marched through the plain country to the mill of Louthe, and encamped beyond the river, Tyrone also marching through the woods and keeping his scouts of horse well in sight of our quarter. Here we were forced to delay again for a fresh supply of victuals from Dredagh, upon which his Excellency, (whom this new delay fretted not a little) summoned a Council of War to consider what was to be done upon Tyrone's army. Of this Council the greater number were more than ever of opinion that 'twas impossible to fight upon such disadvantage; our army being both fewer in number, they said, and worst posted; an opinion at which his Excellency chafed violently, it being as Wormwood to his spirit that he should be within sight of Tyrone, yet hindered still from fighting him.

Upon the afternoon of the same day between the hours of four and five of the clock, there came riding towards us out of the camp of the rebels three men, all well mounted and accoutered. And the midmost man carried at the end of his riding rod a white scarf, in token that he was the

bearer of a message, and craved a Safe Conduct. When his Lordship, who was at the door of his tent, saw these three draw near, he called quickly for his horse, and, desiring us that were about him to follow, he rode forward a little way, and waited for them to draw near.

Then the midmost man, who was clearly also chief of the three, so soon as he had come near my Lord, made an humble obeisance, doffing his hat down to the ground; his Lordship barely touching his own hat, and looking sternly at him the while. And when he was within speaking distance—

"Who are you, sir?" asked his Excellency. "And for what purpose come you before our host?"

"I come, my Lord," said the other, louting again, yet speaking in a clear loud voice, "from the most noble the Earl of Tyrone, who craves speech with your Lordship, and would have you admit him to parley, seeing that he has that to say which concerns your private ear."

"For speech, sir," said my Lord, "methinks 'twere time enough for that when the Earl of Tyrone lays by his arms, and craves her Majesty's mercy. But who are you, I say? for by your speech you are, I take it, no Irishman."

"Nor am I, my Lord, and for my name it is Hubert Walters, formerly one of her Majesty's troop of horse, but for these five last years in the service of the Earl of Tyrone. And this I say openly, and in the hearing of yonder gentlemen, that her Majesty hath had no more faithful servant than that noble Earl, nor would ever have had but that the craft of evil speakers, seeking their own ends, gat between him and her Grace, and so forced him to take up arms in his own behoof, which else I, who know him intimately, can swear he would never in all the years of his life so much as have thought of."

"You have a well-oiled tongue, sir," returned his Excellency, "and it seems to me that the Earl of Tyrone has in you one who knows better how to set forth his cause in cunning colours than he does himself."

"No cunning colours, my Lord," said the other, "but simple truth and fair dealing, as your Lordship would allow were you pleased to hold parley with the Earl, and hear what he has to say in his own behoof."

"Enough, sir," replied his Excellency, turning sharply away. "For yourself we grant you leave to retire in safety as you came. For the Earl, your

master, tell him from me that he knows what is required of him, and that less will by no means serve. And that for parleying with myself, he will find me to-morrow morning upon the hill between our two camps, at the head of her Majesty's forces, where he can readily hold as much parley with me as his soul hath stomach for."

With these words he turned away. Hubert Walters, with the two others, (one of whom I found was called Hagan or O'Hagan, a man much favoured of Tyrone, the other Con O'Neale, a base-born son of his own), rode back whence they came, having gained nothing by their embassy; whereat I rejoiced not a little, having feared his Lordship might be drawn by their guile into some sudden rashness.

Next day, the 6th of September, leaving a colonel with 500 foot and 20 horse to guard our quarters and baggage, his Excellency drew out 2000 foot and 300 horse, and embattled them upon the first great hill in sight of Tyrone, then marched forward to another hill, upon which Tyrone's guard of horse stood, which no sooner saw us approach than they quitted it, and our army made good the place till near three of the clock, during which time Tyrone's foot never showed themselves out

of the wood, while his horsemen were put from all the hills between us and the main body; on which occasion some slight skirmishing took place amongst the light horse, in which a French gentleman of the Lord Lieutenant's troop, and an English gentleman of the Earl of Southampton's, were all that were hurt on our side.

After this a horseman of Tyrone's called on us, and delivered the following message; that Tyrone would not fight nor draw forth, but desired to speak with the Lord Lieutenant, only not between the two armies. Whereupon his Excellency drew back to his quarter, and after his return placed a garrison of 500 foot and 50 horse at Niselrathy, where there was a square castle, and a great bawne with a good ditch round it, and thatched houses for our men to lodge in.

Upon the 7th we marched to Drumcondra, but ere we had got a mile on the road, Hubert Walters and Henry Hagan came again, and in the presence of the Earl of Southampton, Sir George Bourchier, Sir Warham St Leger and other gentlemen, delivered a fresh message from Tyrone, praying her Majesty's mercy, and desiring that the Lord Lieutenant would hear him, which, if his Lordship would agree to do, he would gallop about,

they said, to the ford of Bellaclinthe, which is on the right hand side of the way to Drumcondra.

"What say you, gentlemen?" said his Lordship, turning to those about him. "Shall we listen to this petitioner, seeing that this is the third time he entreats to be heard in his own behalf?"

Then the Earl of Southampton and the rest agreeing that it were well to hear what he had to say, his Excellency despatched two gentlemen with Hubert Walters and Henry Hagan to view this ford of Bellaclinthe. But when they were come to the place they found Tyrone already there, and the water exceeding deep, so that it seemed to them to be no fit place to speak in. Which, they declaring, he grew very impatient, and cried with a loud voice—"Shall I despair then ever to speak with him?" And (knowing the ford) he presently found out a place where, by standing up to his horse's belly in the water, he might be near enough to the other shore to be heard by the Lord Lieutenant, although the latter kept to the hard ground.

Meanwhile his Lordship, followed by the Earl of Southampton, Sir Warham St Leger and the rest, and by a troop of horse, had ridden along the summit of the hill. And, coming presently to a

halt immediately above the place, he saw Tyrone standing there alone in the water, yet doubted at first whether it was Tyrone or no.

So—turning to one that rode nearest to him—"Tell me, I pray you," said he, "is that man whom I see there by himself in the water the Earl of Tyrone?" To which the other replying that it was, his Lordship suddenly exclaimed—"Then by the honour of my name, if he comes out thus alone and without fear to meet me I will not be behind him in courage or courtesy, but will also go down alone to meet him! Tarry here, Gentlemen, till my return."

So saying, before any one could utter a word, or knew a'most what was in his mind to do, he had set spurs to his horse, and galloped down the hill towards where Tyrone was standing up to his horse's belly in the water.

When I saw that, and perceived that his Lordship had in very deed gone down alone and unguarded to meet Tyrone, I was filled with dismay, perceiving plainly that this—though done but in a sudden heat of courage and nobility—might with ease be turned to dangerous uses, and made to bear a very evil sound in the hearing of her Majesty and of the Council.

But we, standing upon that hill-side, saw Tyrone doff his hat so that it all but touched the water running below him, saluting my Lord with much humility, his Excellency at the same time riding forward a little way into the stream, so that presently they came together, and were able to speak without hindrance; Tyrone, as was plain to be seen, urging something with great vehemence and many words; his Lordship on the other hand maintaining a somewhat cold and reserved aspect. And so they continued together for close upon the space of half an hour, we standing above the while, and looking down with no little wonderment at this which had so suddenly befallen before our eyes. And, when they had made an end of speaking, his Lordship rode back to us, and Tyrone also rejoined his own company, which were waiting for him upon the further side.

Not many minutes after, Tyrone sent again that base-born son of his, Con O'Neil, who besought his Excellency from his father that he would let him bring down some of his principal men, and that he would also appoint a like number to come down upon the other side. To this his Lordship agreed, and desired him to bring six men, which he did, namely Cormack O'Neil, McGennis, Maquire,

Ever McCowley, Hubert Walters, and one Qwyn that came from Spain, but is an Irishman by birth. These six with Tyrone rode down to the ford, his Excellency also going down again to the same place, only this time accompanied by the Earl of Southampton, Sir George Bourchier, Sir Warham St Leger, Sir Henry Danvers, Sir Edward Wingfield and myself, Henry Harvey his secretary.

At this second meeting, Tyrone and all his company stood up to their horses' bellies in the water, the Lord Lieutenant with his following standing the while upon the hard ground. And Tyrone spake a long while bare-headed, saluting with great respect, not alone his Excellency, but all we that came with him. After half an hour's conference it was concluded that there should be a meeting of commissioners next morning at a ford near to Garrett Fleminge's castle. And so we parted, the Lord Lieutenant marching on with his army to Drumcondra, and Tyrone returning to his camp.

Next day accordingly Sir Warham St Leger, Sir William Constable, and Sir William Warren were sent with instructions to the place of meeting, Tyrone, before going to parley, sending into Garrett Fleminge's castle four of his principal men

as pledges for the safety of the commissioners. At this parley a cessation of arms was concluded for six weeks, to be continued till May Day, or broken upon 14 days' warning. It was also covenanted that any of Tyrone's confederates who would not assent to this cessation of arms should be left by him to be prosecuted by the Lord Lieutenant; that restitution should be made for all spoils within 20 days, and that for performance of the covenants the Lord Lieutenant should give his *word*, and Tyrone his *oath*.

The above covenant—which was concluded upon the 8th day of September in this our year of Grace 1599—I have been careful to set down in the exact words of the commissioners, seeing that so great a commotion has arisen over it, and that many lying buzzes are at this moment, I hear, current in England on the matter, to the great disadvantage of his Excellency, and the still greater joy of his enemies.

The matter being thus settled, Tyrone retired with all his following into the heart of his country, while his Lordship, having sent messengers with the news of the cessation to her Majesty, marched to Dredagh, where he abode 10 days. At the end of which time, learning that Tyrone had for

a certainty retired, and being anxious to survey the country more nearly, he returned to Garrett Fleminge's castle, bringing with him his own immediate following and three companies of horse as a guard.

This castle stands on the left bank of the river Lagan, not far from the ford of Bellaclinthe, having a wide prospect over all the country round about, also a small stream of great clearness running through rocks at the base, and upon the north side an ancient wood of fir trees, which shelters it somewhat from the violence of the blasts. Upon our first arrival the castle was very damp, the walls steaming with moisture, and having what looked to be long candles depending from every coign of masonry, and much I feared that in such sorry quarters his Excellency would be assailed anew by that ague from which he had already suffered so grievously. The soldiers, however, being sent out to bring in wood, presently built up such a fire that the light spread, not only over the whole castle, but as the night grew darker, to the very trees without, so that their trunks shone red and glowing in the darkness.

My Lord—who was of more cheerful humour that night than I had seen him for many weeks

past—remained seated awhile beside the fire, now and then lifting his head and looking towards the doorway, as if expecting something that was to reach him from thence. Indeed, it being already the twelfth night since the despatch of the messengers with news of the treaty with Tyrone, I knew that he looked for their return, nor wondered that the expectation should move him to some uneasiness, nay, was not a little troubled myself, fearing that the news of the said treaty would prove anything but a toothsome morsel to her Majesty's palate; she having looked for nothing less than the total defeat of Tyrone and all his following.

"May a Plain man ask of what your Discretion is thinking, that you look so solemn and owl-like?" his Excellency suddenly enquired, looking at me across the fire, with a whimsical and mocking smile upon his face.

"Faith, my Lord," said I, "it seems to me that the times demand some little gravity, not only from those set on high like your Lordship, but even from those who, like myself, but share their toils; though belike it savours of presumption in me to say so."

"Now may the Devil, who is the begetter of all hypocrisy, take thy humility, Hal!" cried he im-

patiently, "and for the rest of thine observation, let me tell thee that my soul has not this long time back,—no, not since my first coming to Ireland—sat so lightly in my bosom as it sits to-night. Methinks I could leap and whoop as the schoolboys do when they see their holiday-time draw near; nay, I am myself a very schoolboy, who sees the end of his durance approaching! For this, I tell thee, Hal, (though as yet 'tis but for thy private ear), so soon as ever these messengers sent return, and certain necessary dispositions are made —which, with God's help, will not take many days, —that very hour do I intend to mount horse, ply spur, and set sail from these shores. And then sing Ho! Hal, sing Ho for merry England! And by my faith, if they find me returning to take up again the thankless rule of this brutish country, to be styed amongst its barren bogs, and pestered by its no less barren politics, they may call Essex a Fool first, and a Meekling secondly, and that last is a name which methinks his worst enemies have never hitherto given him!"

"Yet surely, my Lord," said I, "this office of Lord Lieutenant of Ireland is a very high and lofty one, much coveted of those that stand foremost in her Majesty's favour?"

"A high office, Hal?" cried he. "For my part I call it a dog's office, a jade's office, an office to make a good man bad, and an indifferent man a monster! There breathes not, I believe, upon earth at this moment that man whose virtue or prudence could carry him in safety through its intricacies. Nay, 'tis my assured conviction, and I say it in all reverence, that were the Most High to despatch one of His own angelic ministers to be the Vice-regent of this distracted land, neither Gabriel nor yet Michael would return to Heaven save with a very diminished reputation, and the renown of a *Most Indifferent Administrator!*"

"Certes, my Lord," said I, "how comes it then, I wonder, that so many great lords should struggle and contend one with another to be the holders of so little to be desired a post?"

"You may well wonder, Sir Wisdom, nor is there any explanation that I know of, save that man, being the thing he is, ever covets what when be has got he can make least use of, and which is most like to bring him to shame and harm. But this, I tell you plainly, had I but known the half, aye or the quarter of what I know now, I had been hanged as high as Haman ere I accepted this your most lofty office of Lord Lieutenant of

Ireland. For the man who undertakes to hold it must be pitiless as Nero, yet must no trace of blood be found on his hands. He must give ear to all petitioners, and promise to redress all wrongs, yet must he do nothing, and perform nothing, for that were to bring upon himself the reproach of highmindedness. He must know every wound and bleeding sore with which this wretched country bleeds to death, yet must be content to staunch none of them, for that were costly, and money is of all things that which her Majesty least loves to see shed in Ireland. He must hear everything; bear everything; soothe everyone; speak fair to all men; possess his soul in silence; toil early and late; expend the whole of his own poor substance without hope of compensation; compass impossibilities; and at the last?——"

"At the last? my Lord?" I asked, seeing that he paused.

"At the last, Hal, he must expect to return to England to be impeached there for a common rogue and traitor!"

"Nay, my Lord!" cried I. "Nay, nay! your Lordship surely monsters this matter, seeing that all who have borne rule in Ireland have not certainly come to so tragical an end!"

"Name them then, Hal! name them, I say! Take—since 'tis well to avoid too recent an instance—Sir Henry Sidney—Philip's father—was ever better administrator, bolder captain, wiser governor; nobler gentleman? and how did he end? No need to rehearse that end, seeing that 'tis current and familiar to all men. For the rest, do you give me a list of those who have filled this office, and I in turn will give you a list of men who have had their hearts broken, their purses emptied, and themselves defrauded in the end of all honour, joy, comfort, recompense! But enough! The night deepens, and these—as by your uneasy sidelong looks I perceive you think—are perilous topics, unsafe to bestow even upon the keeping of yonder solid-seeming walls, which, like other walls in this country, have no doubt chinks in them, aye, and ears too behind those chinks, for aught a man can tell to the contrary! To bed then, Sir Wisdom, to bed, and let the jade Care go sleep with the politicians! Henceforth—one little swift-passing month safely over—Essex will have naught to say to her, but will let his beard grow in its own fashion; will speak his mind as he listeth; love his friends; hate his enemies; call no man honest when he knows

him to be a liar; spend his money upon his own concerns, and when Death comes, die either peaceably in his own halls, or else merrily in the field, not baited to death like a foolish bull by a pack of yelping dogs, which, though separately nought, yet suffice—they being many and he one—to break the heart and to subdue the courage of a bolder and less currish-natured beast than themselves. And now again To Bed! and sweet sleep lie upon both our eyelids, seeing that we must be bustling and astir betimes in the morning."

XVII

NEXT day by six of the clock his Lordship was in the saddle, and, taking only a small guard, whom he desired to ride at some little distance in the rear, he set forth to survey the country, beginning upon the further shores of the river Lagan.

That morning, until the hour of ten or perchance eleven, the weather, I remember, was of a most unusual clearness, the distant hills being all of a fine violet hue, exceeding fair to look on, the nearer ones green, but so vivid that it was more like precious stones laid amongst the rocks than common grass and herbs. The air too was very sweet and soft, feeling like milk as it touched the cheeks, and there were many larks singing in the sky, and the clouds had a shape and a majesticalness such as I have rarely observed, seeming to float along like galleons laden with all manner of precious things, and bearing within them the messages of a great king.

My Lord was still in that same joyous temper I had remarked in him over night, and as he rode he seemed to drink in new gladness out of the very air he breathed. And we two riding side by side he discoursed to me of all that he purposed doing upon his return to England, and of the great joy he should feel in ridding himself of this uneasy governance of Ireland, and of the many faithful and loving friends he looked to meet, above all of his dear wife, my lady the Countess, who waited so dutifully for him at his manor house of Chartley. Yet once I remember, he paused suddenly upon the brink of a small green hill, as we were riding northward, and looked round him earnestly for the space of some five or six minutes, as if seeking something. And at last, with a sigh—

"'Tis an odd thought to come into a man's mind, and why it should visit me now I know not, Hal," said he, "but know you that had I been born in this Land of Ireland I believe that I could have loved it well enough, for all the trouble it has been to me and seems like yet to be."

"So could not I, my Lord," I replied boldly, "I see nought to love in it, nor yet in its people.

And if I must speak plainly—seeing that your Lordship twitted me only yesternight with hypocrisy—I cannot but grudge that the rebels of this Province should have escaped as easily as they have done, and not have suffered defeat in at least one pitched battle, so as to bring them to reason, and punish them for their contumacy."

"Thou pratest, Hal, of what thou knowest naught!" said his Lordship sharply. "No pitched battle, Sir Ignorance, no, nor twenty pitched battles would have availed aught, else, trust me, I would have tried it. There exists but one weapon would avail here, and that is a slow one to use, and an ugly one moreover to watch when in operation."

"And that weapon, my Lord—?" I asked.

"Is Famine, Hal, Famine! Famine with the grisly face, the clattering bones, the hollow eye sockets! Famine which eats up, not the fighting men alone, but the women and the children too, till there be not one of them left."

"Verily, my Lord," replied I, "seeing that they be one and all either rebels themselves, or at the least kin to rebels, they seem in my humble opinion to have deserved no less."

"And 'Verily, my Lord!'" repeated he mock-

ingly, "for a soft-spoken poet thou art, it seems to me, about as bloody-minded a man as I have often encountered. Did'st ever see a dog starve, that thou pratest of starvation so glibly?"

"Aye, have I, my Lord, and men and women too," I answered with some heat. "Does not your Lordship recal the siege of St Croix in France, and the looks of those in the street as we rode afterwards through the town? Methinks if ever starvation were written in human lineaments 'twere written there, large and plain for all men to read."

"Well do I recall it, Hal, and for that very reason, perchance, have I no pressing desire to renew the sight, especially in a case where I myself would be the main begetter of the same. That 'twill have to be done I doubt not, only—being but a plain man and rough soldier, not a soft-spoken Poet like thyself and the gentle Raleigh—I had as lief another undertook the office, and so spared me the execution of it. But a truce to these babblings! Spur thy horse, man, spur it briskly, or, beshrew me we shall be benighted ere my day's round is half accomplished."

With that we rode on rapidly, keeping at first

due Northward, afterwards taking a somewhat Westerly direction, so as to attain another ford, which a fellow of the country, who had been brought as guide, undertook to shew. And as we rode, the weather, which at first had been so prosperous, changed; the sky getting overcast, so that the distant hills were quite lost to sight; the wind too rising with a moaning sound, like the murmuring of many men at a distance. And towards three in the afternoon when we had begun to go homewards, it got yet darker, the whole floor of Heaven becoming coated with clouds; the rain too beginning to fall, so that we could scarce see six perches ahead of us; the horses stumbling, and we being forced to move slowly because of the roughness of the ground.

Perceiving this, his Lordship called a halt, and commanded that the horse upon which the guide had been set, [which bore also a soldier to guard him], should go first, himself and I following; the rest to come after us two by two, keeping closely in the same track; it being narrow, and the weather so thick and untoward that, were any to stray, some accident might befal. In this manner we proceeded for about an hour, when we again began to draw near to the river Lagan, and

could see it below us, yet so darkly that its banks were scarce discernible from the water which ran between them.

And now a strange and a very terrible thing happened! For when the horse that carried the guide and soldier approached the edge, it started violently, and could by no means be induced to enter the water; seeing which his Lordship himself rode forward, and would have made his horse enter, but it also turned back, rearing and plunging, so that it was some minutes before he could master it again. Afterwards I came to the spot, and turned myself about, in order if possible to see what it was that had so scared the horses. And lo! a woman of great age, clad seemingly in stone grey from head to foot, was sitting upon the brink, close to the head of the ford, and staring silently down into the water. And—looking closely at her, wondering within myself what she could be doing there at that hour—I perceived that she was engaged in what appeared to be washing clothes, or some such work, and so intent was she upon this business that she never once turned her head, for all the noise and commotion that the men and horses were making about her.

"Surely," said I to myself, "this is a very strange sight? How comes it that a woman of this great age should be sitting here alone at this hour of the evening, when throughout the whole of the day that is past we have not met with so much as one human creature, neither man nor yet woman?"

As I so thought all at once, I know not why, there leaped into my mind the remembrance of a tale told me by Mr Delahide in Wexford, to which at the time I paid scant attention, and that he called the tale of "THE GREY WASHER BY THE FORD." Which tale ran that in the days of the early heathen chiefs of Ireland—about which these ignorant people boast so many vain things—whenever a great chief went out to fight in some battle from which he was not destined to come home alive, there met him at the last stream or river he had to cross a woman clad in grey, of a great age, with a face so strange of aspect, and so foully livid in colour, that it made the blood run cold simply to look at her. And this woman, said Mr Delahide, seemed ever engaged in washing or scouring clothes, only, when the chief drew near, she, laughing horribly, would plunge her arm into the water, and hold up to him what seemed to be

the phantom or image of a Dead Man. And he who looked at it knew it for a very certainty as his own semblance and counterpart, and whatever were the wounds that phantom bore—whether of the scalp, or the breast, or whatever other part of the body—those for a certainty would be the wounds of which that chief himself would die in the battle that was shortly to be fought.

Now, when the recollection of that tale came back upon my mind, suddenly the sight of that withered crone, which before had been but strange, became so terrible to me that my hair began to rise erect upon my head for horror, and I could scarce keep in the saddle for the shaking of all my members. And, looking round to see if any other of the party had observed her, I could not discern that any had, saving only the Irish kerne who had come with us as a guide, whose eyes, I saw, were fixed upon her, and his mouth agape with terror, yet a sort of joy breathed too, I thought, in his face, as if he knew that she had come to predict evil, not to him, but to those whom he doubtless counted to be his natural and mortal foes.

But my Lord,—being occupied in examining the river—observed nothing, and having presently

found another place where the water was shallow, he desired the men to ride over carefully one by one; which was done, himself crossing last, and all advancing up the slope, I following gladly, and rejoicing greatly within myself to have escaped from that place without worse befalling.

Nevertheless at the top of the slope which led from the ford to the level country, my Lord paused to breathe his horse, and I, being beside him, was forced to pause likewise. The place where we had crossed the stream lay immediately below us, and the ford we had first come to, and at which that Foul Thing had been sitting, was a little way above, part hidden from sight by some small bushes, as well as by the murkiness of the air.

Suddenly as we stood there my Lord started, and looked directly towards it, screening his eyes with his hand as if to see better.

'Did'st see that, Hal?" he asked, turning to me and speaking quickly.

"See what, my Lord?" I answered, striving to answer carelessly, yet trembling in every limb so that I could scarce utter.

"'Tis strange, but methought at that moment I saw a woman sitting by the brink of yonder ford; a very old woman she seemed to be, and

bent almost to doubleness. Did'st see her too I ask, or did my eyes deceive me?"

"Nay, my Lord," I replied tremblingly, "I saw no such thing; moreover how could a woman of that age be out at this hour, and in so lonesome a place?"—For I feared to own that I had seen her, knowing that she had come there for no good!

"True," replied he thoughtfully. "And yet I surely thought I saw such an one, and moreover it seemed that she beckoned to me with her hand, like one that had somewhat to say, and that in the other hand she held something half hidden under a cloth which she lifted towards me. Strange that a man's eyes should play him such tricks, and, but that the night is so dark, I would ride back to the place, and see whether there be any one there or not."

"Now for the love of God, my Lord," I cried in terror, "do not do so! Who knows but what some ambuscade is intended, and that these treacherous savages have set her there to lure your Lordship into their power!"

"Pish, Hal!" cried he, "either thy fears for me, or perchance thy hatred of this people misleads thee, so that thou smell'st danger in every bush,

and an ambush in every ragged crone sitting harmlessly by the roadside. For a certainty, save that I expect to find yon messengers from the Queen arrived upon my return, I would ride back, and see whether it be as I thought, or whether some mere bush or brake deceived me."

With these words his Lordship turned his horse, as it seemed reluctantly, and rode after the escort, which waited for him a few perches away.

But I—driven by what madness I know not—could not refrain from once again turning my eyes to the place, though much I loathed to do so, and sore I shook in every limb with fear of what I might behold. And lo! that Accursed Crone was still there, only erect now, and standing upon the further brink of the river. And it seemed to me that her stature had grown to be greater than is the stature of any mere mortal woman, so that despite the murkiness of the air I could plainly discern her lineaments, and could see the foul and livid colour of her cheeks, and mark her thin and wrinkled chaps, which seemed to be moving up and down with a deadly and a mocking smile as she looked after us. And in one hand she held something covered with a cloth, the shape of which, so far as I could discern it, appeared to be that of a

human head, newly severed from the trunk, and dripping at the neck with blood, which as she held it aloft, fell down drop by drop into the river running below. Nor was this, [though enough] all, nor the worst, no, nor the half even of what I saw, for as God is my witness, and as I hope, being a sinful man, to be saved by His grace at the last day, so I do here solemnly protest and declare that this gory head which she held thus aloft in her hands appeared to me as I gazed at it to be the very image and presentment of my dear Lord the Earl's own head, only that the cheeks were of a ghastly hue, like those of a man new dead, and that the eyes of it seemed to be tight shut, and all sunk, hollow, and half hidden in the head!

Then, when that fearful vision met my sight, all the blood in my own body seemed to forsake it, and I reeled to and fro in the saddle like a man drunk with wine, so that I marvel how I fell not off the horse, for the river and its banks, and the ground above it, and all that moved upon the ground, became suddenly to me like mist and vapour, rolling horribly along without form or sensible substance.

And for the remainder of that ride, whether my Lord spake or spake not, or by what road we

travelled, or what things we saw by the way, of all this I know and can recall nothing; for I was like one that is carried upon the waves of a stormy sea, my mind being so full of confusion, and trouble, and of great terror, and heaviness. Nay, what I most resembled was a man heavily beset by hideous dreams, who cries out and trembles in his sleep, yet knows not why he does so, or what those things are that so oppress him. And thus I continued all the remainder of the way, till we once more came before the castle of Garrett Fleminge, where old Brace, my Lord's chief body-servant, coming hastily out to the front door, cried to him in a loud voice that the messengers sent by her Majesty had newly arrived from Dredagh, and were awaiting to deliver their charges unto him in the main hall.

mented and driven of evil spirits. And once a settle, placed near the fire, came across him, which he, plucking suddenly aside, broke between his hands, as a child might break an oaten toy, yet knew not, it seemed, that he had done so.

While he thus raged, and while I, all trembling and amazed, stood watching him, the storm [which had been gathering ever since we crossed that ford of the Lagan,] rose and grew till the fury of it appeared to fill the entire earth. For the whole floor of Heaven was by this time darkened, so that there was no light left, save only the light of the fire, and some faint ruddiness which still burned in the West. And ever and again a great rush of wind would come hurtling over the castle, so that it seemed like to drive in the very walls thereof.

And I, standing there, knew not which to fear most, the fury of the elements without, or this sudden anger of my Lord within. For his wrath—(though of late years less easily excited than it was wont to be) still upon occasion, and when he is moved beyond his common, towers to an height such as I have never seen in any other man, and which is more like the rage of angry elements than that of any merely mortal creature.

And so we remained for the space of some ten minutes, I not daring to approach him, lest I should thereby but increase his wrath, or perchance draw it down upon myself.

At last—spying me—he came over; and, catching me by the wrist, pulled me forward into the room, looking into my face the while without speaking; his eyes opening and flashing, as you may see the eyes of an hawk open and flash when it is about to strike.

So—trembling with apprehension—"What is it my Lord?" I asked. "What in God's name moves your Lordship to this sudden heat of choler?"

"Rascality, Hal!" he answered, "Villainy! False Swearing! Calumny! those are what have moved me! Oh, 'tis naught," cried he, suddenly loosing hold of me, and beginning to pace the chamber to and fro as he had done before.—"'Tis naught that the Queen should heap railing accusations upon me, as if it rested with me alone to lay hands upon Tyrone, and bring him in chains before her. 'Tis naught that she should assail me with heart-wounding words, as if every mishap that hath befallen this curst land during the last twenty years lay wholly at my charge. But

'Sdeath! that she should do this! Hell and furies, that she should forbid my return! That she should withdraw the license freely of herself given, and forbid my availing myself of it. Forbid it! Nay 'tis not she! 'tis those lying, intriguing knaves that have stolen into her ear, and would use her now for their own purposes. Look Hal! look at this! and see if betwixt every line of her Majesty's you read not at least ten lines of these plotters, that would fain twist and turn her to their own ends?"

With that his Lordship thrust the letter he had been reading into my hands, pointing as he did so to certain lines, which he commanded me to read aloud, and which ran as follows—

"—Because by your return many and great confusions may follow, our Will and Pleasure is, and we do upon your Duty command you, that, notwithstanding our former License provisionally given——"

"Provisionally! twas not provisionally!" cried he, "as I am a gentleman and a man of honour 'twas absolutely and freely offered by herself, and given to me in writing when I went to take my leave! But read on, I say; read on!"—

"—Whereby you have liberty to return, and

to constitute some temporary governor in your absence, we forbid you now to take that liberty, or to adventure to leave the State in any person's government, save with our Allowance first had of him, and our Pleasure known to you, without which Allowance you are by no means to come out of that Kingdom, by virtue of any former license whatsoever."

"There! There! see you their excellent device?" he cried, snatching up the paper, "they think—Raleigh, Cobham, and the rest—that they have me mewed safely up for ever and ever in this beggarly island! That Essex will stand patient as a hooded falcon, which allows the quarry to be filched from under its very beak! That mischance has so trod his fortunes down that he must bend the knee to those that but use the Queen's name for their own devices. But they doat, Hal! they doat! Essex is no child to be mocked; no moulting eyass or sorry forked kite to be driven from his quarry! Essex will descend upon them when they least expect it! Aye, will he; fast as ship's sails, and swift horses can take him."

"Nay, my Lord," I cried, my fears in his behalf moving me to forget my own late terror. "Nay,

my Lord, you will never return to England, having under your hand her Majesty's plain and express command to remain where you are. To do so, believe me, would be to run into peril; seeing that her Majesty, as all know, brooks not disobedience."

"Peril!" shouted he at the top of his voice, "Peril quotha! Now by the sword of my father I thought you knew me better, Hal! Peril! Since ever you knew Essex—which methinks was not yesterday—did'st ever know him to be hindered by any such cowards' bugs and trumpery as that? Why, man, for a nothing—for mere sport, and to quiet the too free leaping and pricking of the blood—how often have I fronted, and you know it, a hundred such perils, aye and dared fifty foes any of them of greater weight than these that would affront me! Pooh, man, talk not to me of peril! The very word, the thought, is like meat and drink to me! It warms my blood like wine to think how I will surprise them; aye, as a lion surprises some petty hunter, who believes him to be afar off, and suddenly hears him roaring at his elbow."

"But her Majesty, my Lord?" quoth I, all tremblingly.

"Her Majesty? Oh beshrew me, Hal, her Majesty will be glad enough to see me, of that I am assured. Nay, I would wager my Earl's baldrick to the straw girdle of one of yonder kernes that I shall have half these plotters ducking at my knee ere I be three hours in the Court!"

"I hope to Heaven it may be so, my Lord," said I doubtfully.

"You hope! Marry, Hal, but I *know* it to be so. And were it not—were my head to pay the forfeit—yet would I go. I tell thee my soul is on fire till I can reach them. What? Would they screen themselves behind the Queen's petticoats? shoot out their arrows at me from behind that rampart? steal into her ear, rob me of my reward, and in the end laugh in my face? Nay, but I will break their springes ere they grow too proud! My hand shall be upon them, and that right swiftly."

"Alas, my Lord," I said, "what I fear is that those who hate you have planned this device for that very purpose, knowing your fiery nature, and hoping that, you presenting yourself without license before her Majesty, may seem but to approve their calumnies."

"Not so, Hal, you mistake the matter utterly. For, look you, their guile is like the guile of boys setting springes for birds, or like that of some base churl, who would fain enmesh some free forest beast, which, save by treachery, he durst not approach. Face them, Hal; face them, and their power is over! And for this prohibition that so frights you, believe me they have but enchanted it into her Majesty's mind, hoping that by means of it I shall be forced to remain here, obeying what seems her order, but in reality is theirs; they lurking behind her image, as small and indifferent actors on the Greek stage were wont to hide their pettiness under some large and stately mask. Oh, sweet knaves, I know you! Your craft; your cunning; your plotting device! Keep Essex in Ireland! Keep him in prison! Keep him in Hell! Oh clever devices! Oh crafty Councillors! I know you! I know you!"

Then was I silent, fearing only to increase his anger, and not knowing, in truth, what to say, or how to say it. But he, walking to and fro the room, broke ever and anon into a laugh, as if some new thought was stirring within him, the image of which was less displeasing than cheerful, and even mirth-producing.

And presently—"'Fore God, what children and blown dandelion tufts we are!" cried he. "Know you, good fellow, that that one little word of yours, 'Peril,' hath done me more good than would a brace of leeches at my elbow, each with a purge in the one hand and a lancet in the other! For my brain, which a while back was so clogged that it seemed charged with molten lead, now again moves freely, and I feel the blood mount and spin lightly, as the sap does through the trees in spring. Nay, my wits seem clearer than their wont, so that I can see what shall befal ere it come to pass, and enjoy my triumph while as yet it is far off. I laugh, Hal, I laugh to think of their faces when they shall behold me! While the dull fools are plotting my overthrow, and hatching schemes how to poison her Majesty's mind against me—all for her good and the Kingdom's weal!—suddenly in I walk! hot from travel; fresh from my Irish adventures; hat on head; sword on side; boots bespattered to the knees; with a—'Gentlemen, good day! Your humble servant!' Ha ha ha! See you their faces Hal? See you them? Ha ha ha! Ha ha ha!"

Then I was the more afraid, for his laughter seemed to me of scarce less dangerous omen than

his rage awhile back. And in my heart I prayed for strength to be able to utter words which might dissuade my dear Lord—if any words of mine could by possibility do so—from that course upon which he was then entering. But, just as I was about to speak, he, growing suddenly grave, turned upon me ere I could utter two words.

"Hold thy tongue, Hal; hold thy tongue!" cried he, "for I can see the remonstrances growing upon thy lips; but I tell thee my mind is made up to go, and though King Solomon himself stood there in thy image he would not avail to dissuade me. Nay, the more thou fearest my impetuosity the more should'st thou desire my departure, for the longer I delay the hotter grows my wrath, and the deeper and the deadlier will be my revenge. Oh, you placid ones understand us little, believe me! Know that there are depths in natures like mine that it scares even myself to peer into, and to lean over! An I be so wronged that I can by no means right myself, nor yet see justice upon those that injure me, I have it in me to take a vengeance —such a vengeance that our babes' grandchildren will be talking of it still! Aye have I; a vengeance such as no subject hath taken yet; one that will

cause London itself to run red in blood up to the very doorsteps!"

"Now for the love of Heaven, my Lord," I cried in terror, "for the love of God and all good angels go not yet awhile! Wait till the first rush of your wrath is abated! Wait a little, only a little. Wait till you hear again from her Majesty, and some fresh matter arise. Wait I implore you! of such haste no good ever cometh."

"Wait, Hal? What parrot cry is this? Wait? Not I! not a day, nor an hour. Were it not that the night is already advanced I would depart this very moment, and of a certainty not later than tomorrow morning, by first crow of cock. And, the time being short, and there being few here with me, I purpose to take but a couple of gentlemen ushers, and some ten at most of the serving men. But you will I leave behind me in Ireland for the present."

"Leave me behind you, my Lord!" cried I. "Nay, since you must needs go, take me at least along with you. Sure what sin have I committed that my Lord should thus suddenly deny me his service?"

"Sin, Hal? no sin," he replied impatiently. "Nor do I misdoubt your love; nay, for that

reason leave I you behind me, so that I may for a certainty hear what befals after my absence, and have one here on whom I may rely, and with whom I can hold communication. But we waste time! Fetch hither your writing tables, and write quickly to my dictation, for I must forthwith despatch messengers to Dredagh, to warn them that be there of my coming tomorrow, that they prepare betimes to meet me."

Then was I forced to obey, seeing that he would list to naught, or so much as give ear even to any counsel that I durst offer. Yet did I do so with a reluctant heart, and a sore and deeply perturbed mind; seeming to see his overthrow chained, as it were by Destiny, to this his sudden, and most unhappy resolve.

For the more I reflected upon the whole matter the more it grew clear to my mind that in this opposition to her Majesty there lurked for him some great and deadly peril. "For," said I to myself, "such direct disobedience to the very letter of her commands is more than any Sovereign upon earth could stomach, especially one that has never encountered so much as the very breath of opposition without straightway chastising it rudely." And the thought of all that might

yet arise out of this matter grew upon me till my breath began to come in quick pants, and my hands to grow cold, and a great creeping come over me, beginning at the outside of my skin, and reaching in even to the innermost parts of my body.

But all that night, until the very whiteness of dawn was shining afresh in the sky, my Lord continued to walk to and fro that hall; now and again pausing to dictate some portion of a letter to me; yet, ere one letter was fairly finished, beginning at another; then breaking off to call to him one of the serving men or gentlemen ushers, or to give some fresh charges concerning this journey which was to begin upon the morrow.

For my part, though I strove to follow his instructions, yet my mind so wandered that at times I could scarce understand what he said. For whether it was the remembrance of what I had seen that afternoon, or the want of natural sleep, or the beginning of that sickness of which I afterward suffered many things, or the mere cold of that gloomy hall, or whatever the cause was, certain it is that long ere dawn I was like a man that shakes and shivers in the grip of some deadly fever, so that I could scarce see the very letters

that lay under my eyes, and that my own hand had written. Nay, so perturbed was I, that even natural things came to seem unnatural to me, so that often I felt as if the room were suddenly filled with antic creatures, mopping and mowing, and moving hurriedly to and fro with crazy leaps.

And, this perturbation increasing ever more and more, at last everything, even the wind which roared over the roof, and the trees which swayed and bent without; nay the mere crackling of the torches, and movements within doors, caused me to start and shiver like a frightened coney, and my sweat to stand out in big drops, as you may see the drops of dew stand upon the twigs of a morning. And getting worse and worse as the night advanced, it came at length to this that I durst hardly so much as lift up my eyes from the table at which I sat, lest I should suddenly behold some Red-headed Demon of this country peering in at us with fiery eyes, or, worse still, some foul Witch Creature smiling with yellow and withered lips, the smile of one who beckons on another unto his Doom!

XIX

ALL that night, while my Lord and I sat writing, there was great running to and fro in the castle, for his Excellency had given orders that everything should be in readiness by the first dawn of day. And, having lain down about three o'clock for the space of some two hours, by six in the morning he was in the saddle, and by eleven of the same forenoon we rode into the town of Dredagh.

Here he quickly summoned a Council, and gave over the chief charge of all things in the North to Sir Samuel Bagenal, commanding also Sir Warham St Leger, and others who were there, to aid and support him, each in their several degrees. He likewise despatched Sir William Warren to the Earl of Tyrone with news of his departure, but all had to be done in great haste, so that there was scant time for any man to know what he had to do, so firmly was my Lord set upon riding forward, that same day, no man daring to say him nay,

his resolution being so plainly written out upon his face.

Nevertheless, there being much to see to, and many hindrances, it came to be five in the afternoon ere we again set forth from Dredagh to ride to Dublin; I having with some difficulty obtained his Excellency's license to accompany him as far as the ship.

The first part of our road being very bad we were forced to go slowly, so that darkness came down upon us ere we had ridden far; the weather too continued very wet, and the wind exceeding high, only that, being at our backs, it aided forward rather than impeded us. And at the first halting place his Excellency would not delay a moment, but, having procured fresh horses, galloped on; and the same thing happened at the second also; for, though earnestly pressed to tarry, and to recruit his strength with some food and wine, he refused, and pressed on, seeming to be driven as it were by some constraining power, which forbade him either to eat or to rest until his journey was accomplished.

So—like unto some company flying for their lives, who ride and ride and durst not look behind them—rode we; the rain slanting against our

faces, the wind howling at our backs, the horses stumbling, and now and then one falling, through slipping in some deep rut, or being bogged in the foul and marshy ground. And about nine of the clock, the moon flashing suddenly out, Lo! the sea lay below us, looking all cold, white, and naked in its rays, and about an hour, or perchance an hour and a half later we halted at last before the walls of Dublin.

But when, all wearied out and worn with hard riding, we drew rein before the North gate, at first the sentries refused positively to admit us, not knowing who we were, or from whence we had come. And when, after long delay and difficulty, we had at last got in, and it was noised abroad that his Excellency had arrived, [he being expected of no man,] then suddenly, despite the lateness of the hour, a great buzz and commotion spread about the town. And some cried out that Tyrone had been defeated; while others said nay, that it was his Excellency who had been defeated, and that only he himself and we that were with him had escaped alive out of the slaughter; while others said they knew not what, only that some Great Matter had occurred. And the whole city was like an anthill newly overturned, no two agree-

ing as to what had happened; but all, getting up out of their beds, ran hither and thither, and disputed one with another, no man knowing further than his own worthless opinion; until the rain, growing suddenly worse, drave them back to their beds again.

By this time the wind, which had blown hard all day, had altogether fallen, and there was a great stillness. So still was it that, having persuaded my Lord to take some rest, I—standing beside the window of the Castle of Dublin—could hear no sound, only the dripping of the rain which fell from the roof, and the sudden cries of the sentries upon the bridge, and now and then a hollow moaning noise, which came from I know not where, nor could discover.

Moreover I very soon found that, despite the weariness engendered by that long ride, I should win no sleep that night. For whether it was from the weight of the air and from my own disordered spirits, I was so oppressed that I lay tossing to and fro, being filled with feverish imaginations, which nipped at me as it were with claws, until at last I could have sworn that noisome creatures were crawling up out of that black moat which lay around the castle, and coming nearer and nearer

to where I lay. And when I rose up very early the next morning, lo! the stones of which its walls are built were streaked and stained with livid spots, as if a black sweat had broken out upon them. And all those trunkless heads set upon stakes over the arches and before the windows, being heavy with the night's rain, dripped continually, so that by moments they seemed to start aud move, as the great drops fell from off their thick and thatch-like glibbes. And, being already so sick and distraught, I seemed to myself as I gazed at them to be as it were a ghost among ghosts, or a dead man amongst dead men, so that scarce I knew what was real, and what but the mere phantom of my own disordered spirit.

Then in the morning, before I had time to go to his Excellency, old Brace [who of all of lower station is the one whom he trusts most, and who is most worthy to be trusted] came to me, and having made sure none could overhear him, opened his mind to me familiarly, as his way is—

"'Od's light! but there is some right prime villainy afoot here, Master Harvey," said he, "though what it bodes I know not, only that 'tis for sure directed against my Lord."

"What mean you?" said I surprised, "and what particular villainy do you suspect?"

"To know that," replied he, "would need a sharper-set nose than mine. I can smell a rat as fast as any man, but it needs a better trained terrier to know what rat's tricks it is after. Only this I tell ye, Master Harvey, which belike may be news t' you. Know you that there is a second way into this same Dublin Castle by means of a small sallyport hard by yon Birmingham tower?"

"No," said I, "I knew it not, but if there be, what then?"

"Marry this," he answered. "Last night about an hour after we got in, word was brought to me that Suleiman, my Lord's chief horse, was sore strained and galled; as well a might be, the poor brute, coming off such a hag-ridden road, and going at such a godless pace, albeit riderless. So —knowing my Lord would liefer lose ten pounds in gold than that ought hindered Suleiman going with him to England—I bade the lad back, and, said I would follow him to the stabling place, and see what must be done. But when I got out—curse me, but the rain, Master Harvey, was like a wet mop in a man's face, and, having no light, I was sore set to find the way. And, as I was

staggering along, presently I heard a step behind me, and looking round saw one steal softly 'gainst the wall, having a lantern in 's hand, half hid under 's cloak. 'What's to do here in the Fiend's name?' thought I. So I hid behind a sort of buttress-place, and waited till he should pass. And a crept along, Master Harvey, not going straight like a man, but on all fours like a thief, and now and then a wriggled a bit on's belly like a sick cat, till a came to a little door half hid in th' outer castle wall. And when a got to it a worked a while till a got it open. And then I looked hard, and saw six men coming up one after t'other, as 'twere out of th' entrails of th' earth. And most of them were strangers to me, or in the dark seemed so, but just at the last the lantern gave a sort of a twist, and the light struck the hindermost, and that he was one Lance Renshaw, who is serving man to Sir Henry Oldcastle, and that we left him behind us yesternight at Dredagh that I dare swear."

"This is a strange tale, Brace," said I. "And it seemed scarce likely that such as you describe would have followed so close upon our heels we having ridden so hard, and the ways being so foul."

"Like or not like, Master Harvey," he answered,

"I tell ye 'twas he. For, look ye, I was standing yester forenoon in the main street of Dredagh with Nat Gregory, and cursing a bit belike at the suddenness of our setting forth, my bones being so crusty ever since I was nigh lost in that river by Waterford. And just then I spied this flap-eared fellow Lance Renshaw peeping at us round the corner. May I be hanged for a half-penny if I didn't! Why, bless your heart, Master Harvey, I should know the rogue's face of him if he hid it under a bishop's mitre, or dressed it up in a woman's coif, marry would I."

"May be," said I, "still I doubt but you mistook him either here or there. Why, man, 'tis as much as anyone's life is worth to follow my Lord secretly as you describe. Were he to get wind of it 'tis not the greatness of his estate, let him be who he would, that would keep him five minutes from his vengeance."

"Tut, tut, Master Harvey!" said he, impatiently. "I tell ye there's a many things go on here and elsewhere of which my Lord knows little enough. And since y'are so hard to persuade, just you come with me, an' I'll show you a peep hole where you may look into a place in this very castle we be standing in, where, an' I be not far wrong, they do

at this moment hatch some fresh villainy against him; though what that villainy be I know not, not being, I thank God, a politician, nor kin to any of the breed."

With that he led the way, and I followed along a narrow passage, and up one or two flights of stairs, till we came to what had once seemingly been the outer wall of the castle, for it was pricked here and there with small holes, doubtless for the discharging of bolts or arrows. Most of these holes had been filled up with stones, but so roughly that they stood out clear from the surface; and in one place half of them had been picked out again, seemingly in mischief or idleness, so that by pushing his head through a man could look down and see what lay below.

Brace having signed to me to do this, I thrust in my head. But at first saw nothing, the wall being so thick, the hole itself small, and the depth below us very great. Presently—thrusting my head yet further forward, and craning my neck nigh to cracking—I was able to discern a small room some thirty or perhaps forty feet below where we stood, and that in this room were certain gathered together, though who they were I could not tell, the hole being so high above them that only the tops

of their hats were discernible, which hats they wore pulled low down over their faces.

So I waited, thinking that something might hap to reveal them to me. And so it chanced, for presently one, who at first had been seated, rose to his feet, and, fronting the others, spoke to them earnestly for several minutes. To whom the rest listened eagerly, yet not, it seemed to me, as if wholly agreeing with him. Whereupon—being anxious perhaps to convince them—in the earnestness of his discourse he pushed his hat suddenly back from his brows, so that I could see the face of him, which stood out under the shadow of it, thin, sallow, and sharp-nosed as a ferret's. And then, sure enough, I knew him! as would any other man in Ireland, he being at this time the most talked of upon the Queen's side, bating my Lord, in that whole kingdom; whose name out of respect for his office I give not, only this much will I say, that he is known to all men as a sure and a constant unfriend to his Excellency.

Finding presently that I could hear nothing, because of the great depth which separated me from those below, I drew back, sore disquieted, and considering deeply what 'twere best to do in the matter. "For," thought I, "if I go to my Lord

and make him 'ware of who is here, and what manner of secret council they hold within the very walls of the castle, his wrath assuredly will spring abroad like a ball of wild fire, and who knows but what it may cause him to do or say something that may yet further imperil his cause before her Majesty?"

Having charged old Brace therefore to repeat to no man what had been seen and heard, I passed on to his Excellency's bed-chamber. But the minute I entered he began giving me orders so that all might be in readiness for the next morning, when, and no later, he said, he was resolved to sail. Whereupon [first humbly intreating his pardon for my forwardness] I prayed him once more very earnestly to consider his resolve, and to delay his going, were it but for a few days, and till fresh advices came from her Majesty; saying that I knew for a certainty that some ill thing was in the wind; and that those who loved him least were the ones most anxious that he should immediately depart.

At this he at first mocked, asking how long I had been a soothsayer, and so deep in the confidence of statesmen, and that it was plain I knew more of such matters than he did himself. To

which I replied that I made no pretensions either to statecraft nor yet to soothsaying, but that my love for him was like the drawing of the magnet to the pole, and enabled me, [being myself small and of little importance,] to point out the path to one greater than myself, who might otherwise have missed it. Finding that, though he smiled, my words had no weight with him, if indeed he listened to them, I presently expounded to him fully all that I had seen and suspected, and all that old Brace had seen the night before. At the hearing of which he grew, not angry, but rather meditative, as if some thought which was not altogether new to him were stirring again, and moved him to thoughtfulness.

All at once, smiting his two hands together —"Too late! too late," cried he. "A truce to reflection! On, either in God's name, or the Devil's. On, though the winds be never so high; though the sails crack, and the waves roar! That I am encompassed with traitors and treachery I need neither you, nor Brace, nor any other soothsayer to tell me. Marry, what then? The more numerous and subtle my foes the greater the need of boldness on my part, so that I may overmatch them. I tell thee, Hal, I am sick, sick to death

of these eternal rocks! I will e'en now crowd all sail, and so reach some secure haven, or, if it must be, founder quickly. By mine oath I care not so very greatly which it be!"

"Those who love you care then, my Lord!" cried I, passionately.

"Do they, Hal? Some few perchance; you for example, kind heart; for you your Essex's ship, I do believe, is even as your own, and carries all your merchandise."

"Aye, my Lord," said I, "and hath this many a long year past."

"True, Hal, and for that reason I grieve if mischance befal for your sake, and for the sake of some few more that love me. For myself, I tell you honestly I care little. Nay, there have been moods of late in which I have felt like some luckless diver of the Orient, who, having lost his all, resolves to make one last plunge, and either bring back with him some pearl of great price, or else never again be seen upon the surface."

When I heard these words, and saw the look with which he uttered them, my heart seemed suddenly to sink within me, thinking of that fair head of his, which so long had been the daystar of my life, being lost and quenched in the envious

waves. And at the thought and the image it aroused a great sob broke suddenly from my bosom; at sound of which my Lord looked up, seemingly not a little astonished, and then smiled, saying—

"There, there! trouble not thyself, poor soul! I did but speak in jest. Nay, comfort thee! comfort thee, I say! Sure am I that every pulse in thy body beats true to thine Essex. Is't not so?"

"God knows it, my Lord! God knows it!" cried I. "He knows that though I be no fighter, nor boast myself braver than other men, yet would I gladly shed every drop of blood in my veins, here, now, immediately at your feet, rather than that my dear Lord should run into this deadly peril upon which his soul seems to be so bent."

"Gramercy, my poor fellow, thy blood would be of little avail methinks!" replied he, still smilingly. And then he seemed to muse awhile, as if in doubt, not knowing what to decide upon. Whereupon, [fancying that even now and at the last he might be about to yield to my entreaties,] I suddenly dropped before him upon my two knees, stretching out my hands to him and crying —"Master! dear Master! Essex! sweet Lord! Be wrath with thy servant, but hearken to him

this once, only this once! Quit this mad resolve! Go not I pray you; for the love of God go not! For of a surety I see your overthrow chained as if by rivets to this your going!"

At that his countenance changed, and—"Enough, sir! This is mere midsummer madness!" cried he, angrily. "Go to, Mr Harvey, you displease me! Not a word more! What I have said that I have said, and what I have resolved, that do I intend to fulfil. Go to; carry out those orders that I have given you, and see that all is in readiness against the morning; for by my oath there has been but too much delay already."

Then, [seeing plainly that I could effect nothing, but only angered him,] I rose up from my knees very ruefully, and moved toward the door, feeling as if a mountain were piled above my head, and my heart and my limbs were broken down under the weight of the same. But—just as I was leaving the door, and ere it closed behind me—I fancied that he spoke again, so waited; thinking that he might have some further commands to give me.

Finding that he did not speak—"You called me, my Lord?" said I, hesitatingly.

"Aye, Hal, did I. I . . . I would . . ."

Breaking suddenly off in what he was about

to say, he rose from his seat, and, crossing the room came rapidly over to me, holding out his hand. "Hal!" cried he, "Honest Hal! wish me God-speed!" And the last word he uttered hurriedly, like one that is seized with some sudden alarm or misgiving, which he himself understands not, yet can by no means wholly resist. And taking hold of my hand, he wrung it suddenly to and fro. Whereupon for very fulness of heart I could not speak, for my eyes so overflowed, that for several minutes I saw neither him nor ought else that was in the room.

Which—he perceiving—"See how one coward makes two!" cried he, smiling. "Behold how the shadow of your fears, my faithful Hal, has for one instant all but overpeered the well-piled mountain of my own resolution! Yet am I resolved to go! hap what may; come what will; resolved to go, and to out-face them all! For look you, I have a heat in me, a kind of natural fire, so that the very thought of those things of which they falsely accuse me—Liars, cowards, villains that they are!—God's life! when that thought rises before me, it so fills my brain that I seem to burn inwardly, and would fain not think of it, lest the revenge I plan recoil first upon myself, and drive me mad!"

"Think not of it then at all, and for God's sake be calm, my Lord," cried I. For in truth I could see by his eyes and the sudden flushing of his face that his thoughts were too tightly strung for his own good; and much I feared that, arriving in such wrath, and coming when none looked for him, he would but play the advocate to his enemies, and seem to give their calumnies substance.

"True, Hal! I will be calm!—calm as water ere it bursts its ice! calm as Etna when the lava within is at the hottest!—Oh they shall find me calm enough I warrant you! But go now, go, and get all ready for tomorrow. And list, Hal, since you will not bid me God-speed, I at least on my side will bid God bless you, for a truer friend and servant never hot, impatient master found. And if mischance befal me, you may at least comfort yourself by thinking that 'twas no doing of yours, and that I went not without abundant warning to hinder me."

"Oh, my Lord! my Lord!" cried I. "Sorry comfort were that to me if ought befel you, which may God in His infinite pity and mercy avert, and so bring my foolish previsions to nothingness, as I heartily hope and pray."

"Why there! that is well spoken!" cried he.

"Beshrew me, lad, but we shall have many a loud laugh over this yet! Methinks when thou and I are a pair of solemn old grey-beards, these terrors of thine will serve to adorn some tale told to our grandsons over the yule fire, while the flap-dragons splutter, and the maids ply distaffs, and all goes merry in the Hall. But haste away now! haste thee, I say; or our matters are like to be behind-hand in the morning. Suddenly, sweet Hal! Suddenly!"

XX

THEN, next morning being come, by six of the clock all who were of my Lord's company and following were astir to accompany him to the ship, the Captain of the Queen's sloop, whom he had desired privately to be in readiness, having sent word that the tide would only serve up to the hour of eleven at latest.

By this time, it must be understood, many other knights and gentlemen, besides those who had ridden with us from Dredagh, had gathered about his Excellency; the greater part of those that had accompanied him from England being desirous to return thither in his company; of whom the most notable were my Lords of Southampton, and Rutland; also the Lord Dunkellin who is son to the Earl of Clanricarde, with sundry others, all full of great zeal and love for his service.

But when we arose in the morning, lo! a great mist or sea fog covered all the neighbourhood of the Castle of Dublin, so that the town below it

seemed to have wholly melted and vanished away in the night time. And when he left his chamber my Lord could see nothing, neither could we that were with him, so that we staggered in our going, falling one against another, and torches had to be lit that we might find our way. So strange and unnatural-looking a morning I have never seen; and a great weight was thereby laid upon the spirits of all; which [if I dare judge others by myself], were none too light and cheerfully-disposed already.

Hearing that certain of the Council, as well as the Lord Mayor and aldermen of the city, with the pensioners, and other gentlemen, were assembled to greet his Excellency, and to kiss his hands (they not yet knowing that he was about to leave them) he presently passed into the great hall; which hall is mostly used for the assembling of Council, and the delivering of proclamations; we that were with him following, each one in his order.

But when we had got into the hall no man could see who was there, or who was not; for the fog had filled it to the very walls, it being large, and sparingly pierced with windows. Accordingly we stood staring round, being able to see that a

considerable company was certainly gathered there, but not able to discern so much as one of their faces. Moreover it seemed as if some weight or impediment lay upon them; no man stepping blithely forward to greet my Lord, but all hanging back together in a great cluster, as if each was wishful that some other should be the first to tender his duty and obedience.

Observing this, his Excellency stood still a minute, as if surprised. Presently, clapping his hands together, he called with a loud voice for more torches to be brought. And when the men that carried them came running in, he ordered that they should stand at intervals round about the hall, so as to lighten it; and that others, to the number of six or eight, should gather about himself, and throw their lights forward, so that he might be able for a certainty to discern whom he was addressing.

This being done he advanced up the middle of the hall, the Earl of Southampton and other gentlemen that were to sail with him keeping close beside him, their swords, spurs, and other accoutrements making a great jingling noise as they moved across the pavement. My Lord himself wore on this occasion his suit of black armour, and over it

a loose velvet surcoat embroidered in pearls, which surcoat had been made for him two years since in Prague; the sleeves of it very wide, hanging in the oriental fashion nearly to his knees; the buttons each a great pearl, set about with smaller ones in the semblance of a rose or chamomile flower.

When he had got into the centre of the hall, and saw that all eyes were earnestly intent upon him, he stood still again, and held up his hand, to indicate that he had somewhat of importance to say. And, this done, he brake to them his coming departure, of which up to then none had known anything, save by rumours; telling them that it was expedient that he should go, seeing that the service of her Majesty and of the State required it; but not entering into the causes that led to this his sudden resolution, and speaking in such peremptory-wise that none who heard him durst reply, however they might inwardly be astonished at the same.

Then—leaving them all open-mouthed and staring—he passed on into an inner chamber; and, having summoned before him the Council, he made over the government of Ireland to the Lord Chancellor and the Treasurer; also to Dr Adam

Loftus, the Archbishop, appointing all three of them to be Lords Justices. For the command of the army, this he resigned into the hands of the Earl of Ormonde; who, not being in Dublin at the time, had to be written to in all haste to Kilkenny; nor knew anything of what had befallen till my Lord was already far upon his road to London.

By this time it was near ten of the clock, and—the horses standing ready and saddled at the door—all who were to accompany my Lord to the sloop mounted, and rode out by the great gate of the Castle; he having to take boat at the same place, namely the *Ring's End*, at which we had disembarked upon our arrival. For by no ordinary tide can any ship drawing over five feet of water advance to the quays of Dublin, but must lie ever out at this *Ring's End;* moreover even there the haven falleth almost wholly dry with every ebb, so that a man may walk dry foot, 'tis said, round the ships; saving only at two places, one on the North, called the Pool of Clontarf, and one upon the South called the Poolbeg; which two places do run never dry, but ships can lie there, readily afloat in as much as nine and ten feet of water.

Having got beyond the walls of the city, suddenly the fog seemed to roll down upon us with

greater volume than before, falling over and over in vast scrolls and circles of vapour. Yet, it being somewhat higher in air, we found it easier to discern our footing, which was fortunate, this way from Dublin to the *Ring's End* being a very dangerous one, the sea water at every high tide invading it, leaving only a narrow passage, most easily to be missed, especially in foul weather. As befel indeed on this occasion, though not to us. For no sooner was it noised abroad through Dublin that my Lord was for a certainty sailing that morning, than there came running out from the streets and bye-ways a great press of people, all eager to see him depart. And as many as could procure horses followed in our train, and many more that could procure no horses ran a-foot; of whom a considerable number, I was afterwards informed, missing their way in the fog, got astray amongst the pools, sands, and brackish places; and narrowly escaped drowning.

For our part, though not without peril of the like misadventure, we attained the shore in safety; where we found that, the tide being high, the Queen's sloop had been able to be brought close up to the very edge of the quay, so that the boats had but a short way to go. My Lord having

stepped himself into the first of these, accompanied by the Earl of Southampton, the rest crowded into others, as many as they could find. But me, his Excellency strictly forebade to follow him on board, fearing, I imagine, that my grief might break out too violently at the last, or perchance that I might renew my efforts to stay his going, which would only trouble him, and assuredly serve no better purpose, all being now so utterly fixed, finished and determined.

So, [being left alone upon the sea shore, with only certain of the baser sort around me, every man who could obtain licence having crowded toward the vessel,] I turned aside my head, not bearing to see the last of him whom of all men on earth I loved best, and next to God revered. And my eyes—which hitherto I had restrained, fearing to displeasure him — overflowed, so that for some minutes I could see naught, neither the sea, nor yet the ship, nor they that were about me, nor they that in boats were fast hastening after him to the sloop. But at length, hearing a stir and murmur amongst those who pressed nearest to the edge of the wharf, I, too, suddenly uplifted my head, and looked whither the rest had gone. And lo! the ship seemed to have come much nearer to me than

at first, having perchance been wafted closer by the tide. And right in front of it upon the deck stood my Lord, having lately mounted thereon, and so close seemingly that I could perceive the very whiteness of his neck where it rose above his armour. And upon either hand of him stood knights and gentlemen, as many as the sloop would hold. And behind him stood one holding aloft a great sword, which is called the Sword of State, and which he held high erect in air, and naked, as the custom is. And for what reason it should have come into my mind at that moment God alone knows, who understands the secrets of our hearts, and can read those mysteries of our nature which we ourselves neither understand, nor can give any reasonable account of; but, as if in a vision, suddenly it seemed to me that this place upon which his Excellency stood was no ship at all, nor yet the deck of a ship, but a scaffold; and that this man who bore the naked sword on high was no other than an executioner; and that he and I, and all that crowd of people, both those around him upon the ship, and those who pressed beside me upon the shore, had all come together that day to see my dear Lord die!

Now, when that thought came into my mind

it was like a sharp and cruel spear piercing to the very vitals; nay, so sharp was it, and so cruel was its thrust, that with difficulty could I refrain from uttering a cry; and, only that, suddenly stretching out my hand, I caught at a stake set erect there by the fishermen for the drying of their nets, and so saved myself, assuredly I should have fallen to the ground.

But gazing now, even as a man gazeth whose last hope in this life seems to be parting from before his eyes, I saw my Lord advance and speak to the Captain; and, having conferred with him awhile, he turned next to give his orders to those that were to remain behind in Ireland. And, as he did so, each man to whom he spoke bowed himself low before him, kissing his hand as though he had been a very prince or monarch. Yet for all this bowing and all this humility, that dreadful thought never for one moment left my mind. Nay, it rather seemed to me as if they were but excusing themselves before him, as is often done when a great man comes to die, and they that are the ministers of his death do entreat his pardon, they being, as he well knows, but the ignorant instruments, and not the actual and witting originators of his Doom.

The wind being at this time very favourable, although so light, the anchors that attached the ship were speedily loosed; all who were aboard of it, but not to sail, hastening to regain the land. And no sooner was it clear of them than—like to some live thing which regains its liberty—the sloop began to move, the mists giving way before it as it advanced, and curving in behind with long loops and twisting coils of vapour, as it were a brood of serpents new disturbed. And some of these coils were so high that they reached to the tops of the masts, entangling and encircling the sails so that they seemed half strangled; and underneath them I could see the black water, bestrewn with long ropes and tassels of foam where the late storm had flung them. Then, being so bemused with my trouble, in place of watching the ship I kept staring down, I know not why, into this dark and troubled waste of water which rolled between it and me. And as I did so, suddenly it seemed to me that I saw something like a hand clutching vacantly, and then as it were an arm, which appeared rising up out of the water, and as suddenly falling back to it again. And, still gazing down like one bewildered, who knows not what he does or why he does it, little by little there grew upon

me the semblance of a face, which yet was not like any human face, but so deformed and shapeless that it resembled something half created; or rather something that had once had life, but that Death had overtaken, and has passed therefore into that foul and unsightly condition to which all, even the fairest of us, must some day come.

So, staring down perplexed and stupified—wondering in the blankness of my mind how it could be that this thing which had scarce any form at all, and at which the mind revolted utterly, should yet seem so familiar—all at once there returned to my mind the remembrance of that foul Witch or She-fiend whom I had seen in Ulster, the day that I rode out with my Lord early in the morning, and that, coming back late in the afternoon, we crossed the ford of the Lagan. Then, being already so weak, foolish, and devoid of comfort, when that last dreadful recollection took possession of my mind suddenly it seemed to me that I no longer cared what befel. For everything which men most strive, pant, and struggle to obtain; everything, whether of fair repute, or of foul repute, of good or evil hap, all had in that one instant become to me as it were alike and indifferent; Sorrow itself remaining but an idle word,

something that is understood of in a dream, but fades and has become mere Nothingness by the morning. And in this mood of mine the ship and all that were upon it passed away from my sight, dissolving as a dream dissolves, or some pageant, which though it may seem to be firm for a moment, yet having once passed on, never returns again.

* * * * * * *

TO THE HONOURED AND WORSHIPFUL READER, A BRIEF APOLOGIE, OR MODESTE WORDE OF EXPLANATION. BY O. MADDOX, A.M.

UNCOMFORTABLE! Uncommendable! Thus suddenly, with so bald an Ending, (or rather plainly No-Ending,) closeth the Narrative of Mr Harvey. Which Narrative, far from providing its Reader with any orderly Account of what befel the Writer's Master and Patron after his return to England, leaveth the whole of this After-Portion of his History to mere Clouds, Darkness, and the mistaken Imaginations of the Ignorant. Nevertheless, the Events which led to the Fall, End, Death, and Undoing of that Nobleman being known to all men, and the said ROBERT DEVEREUX EARL OF ESSEX a Figure familiar, it may be said, even to the eyes of the Vulgar, it seemeth needless for me at this Date to refurnish those Points wherein the above Narrative so plainly faulteth. Praying therefore the Reader to understand that, (save for the correction of certain

visible and Eye-afflicting Blemishes,) no Portion of the foregoing Narrative must either in mistaken Kindness, or by deeper seated Malice be ascribed to Me,

I rest that honoured Reader's Servant; to be at all Times and in all Places by him commanded.

O. M.

THE END

Colston & Coy. Limited, Printers, Edinburgh.

A CATALOGUE OF BOOKS AND ANNOUNCEMENTS OF METHUEN AND COMPANY PUBLISHERS : LONDON 36 ESSEX STREET W.C.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
ANNOUNCEMENTS,	2
GENERAL LITERATURE,	8-27
METHUEN'S STANDARD LIBRARY,	27
BYZANTINE TEXTS,	27
LITTLE LIBRARY,	28
LITTLE GUIDES,	28
LITTLE BIOGRAPHIES,	28
LITTLE BLUE BOOKS	29
LIBRARY OF DEVOTION,	29
OXFORD COMMENTARIES,	29
HANDBOOKS OF THEOLOGY,	29
CHURCHMAN'S LIBRARY,	29
CHURCHMAN'S BIBLE,	30
LEADERS OF RELIGION,	30
SOCIAL QUESTIONS OF TO-DAY,	30
UNIVERSITY EXTENSION SERIES,	31
COMMERCIAL SERIES,	31
CLASSICAL TRANSLATIONS,	31
SCHOOL EXAMINATION SERIES,	32
METHUEN'S JUNIOR SCHOOL-BOOKS,	32
TEXTBOOKS OF TECHNOLOGY,	32
FICTION,	32-38
THE FLEUR DE LIS NOVELS,	39
BOOKS FOR BOYS AND GIRLS,	40
THE NOVELIST,	40
METHUEN'S SIXPENNY LIBRARY,	40

AUGUST 1902

MESSRS. METHUEN'S
ANNOUNCEMENTS

THE COMPLETE WORKS OF CHARLES LAMB. Edited by E. V. LUCAS. With numerous Illustrations. *In Seven Volumes. Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. each.*

This new edition of the works of Charle and Mary Lamb, in five volumes (to be followed by two volumes containing the Letters), will be found to contain a large quantity of new matter both in prose and verse—several thousand words in all. Mr. E. V. Lucas, the editor, has attempted in the notes, not only to relate Lamb's writings to his life, but to account for all his quotations and allusions—an ideal of thoroughness far superior to any that previous editors have set before themselves. A Life of Lamb by Mr. Lucas will follow next year.

THE LIFE AND LETTERS OF OLIVER CROMWELL. By THOMAS CARLYLE. With an Introduction by C. H. FIRTH, M.A., and Notes and Appendices by Mrs. S. C. LOMAS. *Three Volumes. 6s. each.* [*Methuen's Standard Library.*

This edition is brought up to the standard of modern scholarship by the addition of numerous new letters of Cromwell, and by the correction of many errors which recent research has discovered.

CRITICAL AND HISTORICAL ESSAYS. By LORD MACAULAY. Edited by F. C. MONTAGUE, M.A. *Three Volumes. Crown 8vo. 6s. each.* [*Methuen's Standard Library.*

The only edition of this book completely annotated.

IN MEMORIAM, MAUD, AND THE PRINCESS. Edited by J. CHURTON COLLINS, M.A. *Crown 8vo. 6s.* [*Methuen's Standard Library.*

THE FRENCH REVOLUTION. By THOMAS CARLYLE. Edited by C. R. L. FLETCHER, Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. *Three Volumes. Crown 8vo. 6s. each.* [*Methuen's Standard Library.*

This edition is magnificently equipped with notes.

LORD STRATHCONA: THE STORY OF HIS LIFE. By BECKLES WILLSON. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d.*

OTHELLO. Edited by H. C. HART. *Demy 8vo. 3s. 6d.* [*The Arden Shakespeare.*

ROBERT HARLEY, EARL OF OXFORD. By E. S. ROSCOE. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d.*

WALTER RALEIGH. By Miss J. A. TAYLOR. With 12 Illustrations. *Cloth*, 3*s*. 6*d*.; *leather*, 4*s*. *net*.
[*Little Biographies*.

LORD TENNYSON. By A. C. BENSON, M.A. With 12 Illustrations. *Cloth*, 3*s*. 6*d*.; *leather*, 4*s*. *net*.
[*Little Biographies*.

ERASMUS. By E. F. H. CAPEY, M.A. With Illustrations. *Cloth*, 3*s*. 6*d*.; *leather*, 4*s net*. [*Little Biographies*.

CHRISTMAS BOOKS By W. M. THACKERAY. Edited by STEPHEN GWYNN. *Pot 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Library*.

ESMOND. By W. M. THACKERAY. Edited by STEPHEN GWYNN. *Two Volumes*. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*. [*The Little Library*.

CHRISTMAS BOOKS. By CHARLES DICKENS. Edited by STEPHEN GWYNN. *Two Volumes*. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*. [*The Little Library*.

THE INGOLDSBY LEGENDS. Edited by J. B. ATLAY. *Two Volumes*. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Library*.

A LITTLE BOOK OF ENGLISH SONNETS. Edited by J. B. B. NICHOLS. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Library*.

THE SCARLET LETTER. By NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Library*.

THE INHERITANCE By SUSAN FERRIER. *Two Volumes*. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 1*s*. 6*d*. *net*; *leather*, 2*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Library*.

PARIS. By HILAIRE BELLOC. *Crown 8vo*. 6*s*.

CORNWALL. By A. L. SALMON. Illustrated by B. C. BOULTER. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 3*s*.; *leather*, 3*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Guides*.

KENT. By G. CLINCH. Illustrated by F. D. BEDFORD. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 3*s*.; *leather*, 3*s*. 6*d*. *net*. [*The Little Guides*.

BRITTANY. By S. BARING GOULD. Illustrated by J. WYLIE. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth*, 3*s*.; *leather*, 3*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Guides*.

THE ENGLISH LAKES. By F. G. BRABANT, M.A. Illustrated by E. H. NEW. *Pott 8vo*, *cloth* 3*s*.; *leather*, 3*s*. 6*d*. *net*.
[*The Little Guides*.

A JUNIOR CHEMISTRY. By E. A. TYLER, B.A., F.C.S., Science Master at Framlingham College. With 73 Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.* [*Methuen's Junior School Books.*

JUNIOR ALGEBRA EXAMINATION PAPERS. By W. S. FINN, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 1*s.*

The Little Blue Books for Children

Edited by E. V. LUCAS.

Illustrated: Square Fcap. 8vo. 2*s.* 6*d.*

Messrs. METHUEN are publishing a series of children's books under the above general title. The aim of the editor is to get entertaining or exciting stories about normal children, the moral of which is implied rather than expressed. The books are reproduced in a somewhat unusual form, which has a certain charm of its own. The new volumes are:

A SCHOOL YEAR. By NETTA SYRETT.

THE PEELES AT THE CAPITAL. By T. HILBERT.

THE TREASURE OF PRINCEGATE PRIORY. By T. COBB.

Fiction

TEMPORAL POWER: A STUDY IN SUPREMACY. By MARIE CORELLI. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE SEA LADY. By H. G. WELLS. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

A FIVE YEARS' TRYST AND OTHER STORIES. By Sir WALTER BESANT. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE HOLE IN THE WALL. By ARTHUR MORRISON, Author of 'A Child of the Jago,' etc. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

OLIVIA'S SUMMER. By Mrs. M. E. MANN, Author of 'The Patten Experiment.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

A BAYARD FROM BENGAL. By F. ANSTEY, Author of 'Vice Versâ.' Illustrated by BERNARD PARTRIDGE. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

A VOLUME OF STORIES. By 'Q.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE RIVER. By EDEN PHILLPOTTS. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

A ROMAN MYSTERY. By RICHARD BAGOT. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

JAIR THE APOSTATE. By A. G. HALES. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

FELIX. By R. HICHENS, Author of 'Flames,' etc. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

CHILDREN OF THE BUSH. By HARRY LAWSON. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE FOUNDING OF FORTUNES. By JANE BARLOW Author of 'Irish Idylls.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE CREDIT OF THE COUNTY. By W. E. NORRIS. Illustrated by N. TENISON. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

HONEY. By HELEN MATHERS, Author of 'Comin' thro' the Rye.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

HOLY MATRIMONY. By DOROTHEA GERARD, Author of 'Lady Baby.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

MISS QUILLET. By S. BARING-GOULD, Author of 'Mehalah.' Illustrated by G. GRENVILLE MANTON. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

BARBARA'S MONEY. By ADELINE SERGEANT, Author of 'The Story of a Penitent Soul.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

JIM TWELVES. By W. F. SHANNON, Author of 'The Mess Deck.' *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

THE ADVENTURES OF SIR JOHN SPARROW. By HAROLD BEGBIE. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE FATE OF VALSEC. By J. BLOUNDELLE BURTON. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

PAPA. By Mrs. C. N. WILLIAMSON, Author of 'The Barnstormers.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

MRS. CLYDE. By JULIEN GORDON. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE BRANDED PRINCE. By WEATHERBY CHESNEY, Author of 'John Topp, Pirate.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

A PRINCESS OF THE HILLS. By Mrs. BURTON HARRISON. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE TWICKENHAM PEERAGE. By RICHARD MARSH, Author of 'The Beetle.' *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

THE PUPPET CROWN. By HAROLD MACGRATH. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

ASTED FIRES. By HUME NISBET. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

WITH ESSEX IN IRELAND. By the Hon. EMILY LAWLESS. *Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

A cheaper edition of a book which won considerable popularity in a more expensive form some years ago.

THE INCA'S TREASURE. By ERNEST GLANVILLE. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

The Novelist

Messrs. METHUEN are issuing under the above general title a Monthly Series of Novels by popular authors at the price of Sixpence. Each Number is as long as the average Six Shilling Novel.

No. XXXII. THE KLOOF BRIDE. By ERNEST GLANVILLE.

Methuen's Sixpenny Library

THE MILL ON THE FLOSS. By GEORGE ELIOT.
PETER SIMPLE. By CAPTAIN MARRYAT.
MARY BARTON. By MRS. GASKELL.
PRIDE AND PREJUDICE. By JANE AUSTEN.
NORTH AND SOUTH. By MRS. GASKELL.
JACOB FAITHFUL. By CAPTAIN MARRYAT.
SHIRLEY. By CHARLOTTE BRONTË.

A CATALOGUE OF

MESSRS. METHUEN'S PUBLICATIONS

PART I.—GENERAL LITERATURE

Jacob Abbot. THE BEECHNUT BOOK. Edited by E. V. LUCAS. Illustrated. *Square Fcap 8vo.* 2s. 6d.
[Little Blue Books.

W. F. Adeney, M.A. See Bennett and Adeney.

Æschylus. AGAMEMNON, CHOEPHOROE, EUMENIDES. Translated by LEWIS CAMPBELL, LL.D., late Professor of Greek at St. Andrews. 5s.
[Classical Translations.

G. A. Aitken. See Swift.

William Alexander, D.D., Archbishop of Armagh. THOUGHTS AND COUNSELS OF MANY YEARS. Selected from the writings of Archbishop ALEXANDER. *Square Pott 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

St. Anselm. THE DEVOTIONS OF. Edited by C. C. J. WEBB, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.*
[Library of Devotion.

Aristophanes. THE FROGS. Translated into English by E. W. HUNTINGFORD, M.A., Professor of Classics in Trinity College, Toronto. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

Aristotle. THE NICOMACHEAN ETHICS. Edited, with an Introduction and Notes, by JOHN BURNET, M.A., Professor of Greek at St. Andrews. *Demy 8vo.* 15s. *net.*

'We have seldom, if ever, seen an edition of any classical author in which what is held in common with other commentators is so clearly and shortly put, and what is original is (with equal brevity) of such value and interest.'—*Pilot.*

J. B. Atkins. THE RELIEF OF LADYSMITH. With 16 Plans and Illustrations. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

St. Augustine. THE CONFESSIONS OF. Newly Translated, with an Introduction and Notes, by C. BIGG, D.D., late Student of Christ Church. *Third Edition. Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.*
[Library of Devotion.

'The translation is an excellent piece of English, and the introduction is a masterly exposition. We augur well of a series which begins so satisfactorily.'—*Times.*

Jane Austen. PRIDE AND PREJUDICE. Edited by E. V. LUCAS. *Two Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each volume, cloth,* 1s. 6d.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

NORTHANGER ABBEY. Edited by E. V. LUCAS. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

Constance Bache. BROTHER MUSICIANS. Reminiscences of Edward and Walter Bache. With 16 Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 6s. *net.*

R. S. S. Baden-Powell, Major-General. THE DOWNFALL OF PREMPEH. A Diary of Life in Ashanti, 1895. With 21 Illustrations and a Map. *Third Edition. Large Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE MATABELE CAMPAIGN, 1896. With nearly 100 Illustrations. *Fourth and Cheaper Edition. Large Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Graham Balfour. THE LIFE OF ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON. *Second Edition. Two Volumes. Demy 8vo.* 25s. net.

'The biographer has performed his labour of love with exemplary skill, with unfailing good taste, and with an enthusiastic admiration for the genius of the writer and a whole-souled affection for the man.'—*Daily Telegraph.*

'The story has all the charm of a revelation. It is written with admirable taste and simplicity.'—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

Mr. Balfour has done his work extremely well—done it, in fact, as Stevenson himself would have wished it done, with care and skill and affectionate appreciation. His own personal tribute in the last chapter of the second volume is an admirable piece of writing, the tribute of a relative and admirer, but none the less faithful and discerning.'—*Westminster Gazette.*

S. Baring-Gould, Author of 'Mehalah,' etc.

THE LIFE OF NAPOLEON BONAPARTE. With over 450 Illustrations in the Text, and 12 Photogravure Plates. *Gilt top. Large quarto.* 36*s.*

'The main feature of this gorgeous volume is its great wealth of beautiful photogravures and finely-executed wood engravings, constituting a complete pictorial chronicle of Napoleon I.'s personal history.'—*Daily Telegraph.*

THE TRAGEDY OF THE CÆSARS. With numerous Illustrations from Busts, Gems, Cameos, etc. *Fifth Edition. Royal 8vo.* 15*s.*

'A most splendid and fascinating book on a subject of undying interest. It is brilliantly written, and the illustrations are supplied on a scale of profuse magnificence.' —*Daily Chronicle.*

A BOOK OF FAIRY TALES. With numerous Illustrations and Initial Letters by ARTHUR J. GASKIN. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. Buckram.* 6*s.*

OLD ENGLISH FAIRY TALES. With numerous Illustrations by F. D. BEDFORD. *Second Edition. Cr. 8vo. Buckram.* 6*s.*

'A charming volume.'—*Guardian.*

THE CROCK OF GOLD. Fairy Stories. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

'Twelve delightful fairy tales. —*Punch.*

THE VICAR OF MORWENSTOW: A Biography. A new and Revised Edition. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

A completely new edition of the well-known biography of R. S. Hawker.

DARTMOOR: A Descriptive and Historical Sketch. With Plans and numerous Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

'A most delightful guide, companion and instructor.'—*Scotsman.*

THE BOOK OF THE WEST. With numerous Illustrations. *Two volumes.* Vol. I. Devon. *Second Edition.* Vol. II. Cornwall. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6*s. each.*

'Bracing as the air of Dartmoor, the legend weird as twilight over Dozmare Pool, they give us a very good idea of this enchanting and beautiful district.'—*Guardian.*

A BOOK OF BRITTANY. With numerous Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

Uniform in scope and size with Mr. Baring-Gould's well-known books on Devon, Cornwall, and Dartmoor.

OLD COUNTRY LIFE. With 67 Illustrations. *Fifth Edition. Large Cr. 8vo.* 6*s.*

AN OLD ENGLISH HOME. With numerous Plans and Illustrations. *Cr. 8vo.* 6*s.*

HISTORIC ODDITIES AND STRANGE EVENTS. *Fifth Edition. Cr. 8vo.* 6*s.*

YORKSHIRE ODDITIES AND STRANGE EVENTS. *Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

STRANGE SURVIVALS AND SUPERSTITIONS. *Second Edition. Cr. 8vo.* 6*s.*

A GARLAND OF COUNTRY SONG: English Folk Songs with their Traditional Melodies. Collected and arranged by S. BARING-GOULD and H. F. SHEPPARD. *Demy 4to.* 6*s.*

SONGS OF THE WEST: Traditional Ballads and Songs of the West of England, with their Melodies. Collected by S. BARING-GOULD, M.A., and H. F. SHEPPARD, M.A. In 4 Parts. *Parts I., II., III.,* 3*s. each. Part IV.,* 5*s. In One Volume, French Morocco,* 15*s.*

'A rich collection of humour, pathos, grace, and poetic fancy.'—*Saturday Review.*

S. E. Bally. A FRENCH COMMERCIAL READER. With Vocabulary. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2*s.*

[Commercial Series.

FRENCH COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE. With Vocabulary. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2*s.*

[Commercial Series.

A GERMAN COMMERCIAL READER. With Vocabulary. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.*

[Commercial Series.

GERMAN COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE. With Vocabulary. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

[Commercial Series.

W. E. Barnes, D.D. ISAIAH. *Two Volumes. Fcap. 8vo.* 2*s. net each.* Vol. I. With Map.

[Churchman's Bible.

Mrs. P. A. Barnett. A LITTLE BOOK OF ENGLISH PROSE. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1*s.* 6*d. net; leather,* 2*s.* 6*d. net.*

[Little Library.

R. R. N. Baron, M.A. FRENCH PROSE COMPOSITION. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d. Key,* 3*s. net.*

H. M. Barron, M.A., Wadham College, Oxford. TEXTS FOR SERMONS ON VARIOUS OCCASIONS AND SUBJECTS. With a Preface by Canon SCOTT HOLLAND. *Crown 8vo* 3*s.* 6*d.*

C. F. Bastable, M.A., Professor of Economics at Trinity College, Dublin. THE COMMERCE OF NATIONS. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo* 2s. 6d.
[Social Questions Series.

H. M. Batson. See Edward FitzGerald.

A. Hulme Beaman. PONS ASINORUM; OR, A GUIDE TO BRIDGE. *Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 2s.
A practical guide, with many specimen games, to the game of Bridge.

Peter Beckford. THOUGHTS ON HUNTING. Edited by J. OTHO PAGET, and Illustrated by G. H. JALLAND. *Demy 8vo.* 10s. 6d.

William Beckford. THE HISTORY OF THE CALIPH VATHEK. Edited by E. DENISON ROSS. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

H. C. Beeching, M.A. See Tennyson.

Jacob Behmen. THE SUPERSENSUAL LIFE. Edited by BERNARD HOLLAND. *Fcap. 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

W. H. Bennett, M.A.. A PRIMER OF THE BIBLE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.
'The work of an honest, fearless, and sound critic, and an excellent guide in a small compass to the books of the Bible.' —*Manchester Guardian.*

W. H. Bennett and W. F. Adeney. A BIBLICAL INTRODUCTION. *Crown 8vo.* 7s. 6d.
'It makes available to the ordinary reader the best scholarship of the day in the field of Biblical introduction. We know of no book which comes into competition with it.' —*Manchester Guardian.*

A. C. Benson, M.A. THE LIFE OF LORD TENNYSON. With 12 Illustrations. *Fcap. 8vo. Cloth,* 3s. 6d.; *Leather,* 4s. *net.* [Little Biographies.

R. M. Benson. THE WAY OF HOLINESS: a Devotional Commentary on the 119th Psalm. *Crown 8vo.* 5s.

M. Bidez. See Parmentier.

C. Bigg, D.D. See St. Augustine, A Kempis, and William Law.

C. R. D. Biggs, B.D. THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS. Edited by. *Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d. *net.* [Churchman's Bible.
'Mr. Biggs' work is very thorough, and he has managed to compress a good deal of information into a limited space.' —*Guardian.*

T. Herbert Bindley, B.D. THE OECUMENICAL DOCUMENTS OF THE FAITH. With Introductions and Notes. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.
A historical account of the Creeds.

William Blake. See Little Library.

R. Blaxland, M.A. THE SONG OF SONGS. Being Selections from ST. BERNARD. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Library of Devotion.

George Body, D.D. THE SOUL'S PILGRIMAGE: Devotional Readings from his published and unpublished writings. Selected and arranged by J. H. BURN, B.D. *Pott 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

A. Boisragon, Captain. THE BENIN MASSACRE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

Cardinal Bona. A GUIDE TO ETERNITY. Edited with an Introduction and Notes, by J. W. STANBRIDGE, B.D., late Fellow of St. John's College, Oxford. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Library of Devotion.

F. C. Boon, B.A. A COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF FOREIGN NATIONS. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. [Commercial Series.

George Borrow. LAVENGRO. Edited by F. HINDES GROOME. *Two Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each volume, cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

J. Ritzema Bos. AGRICULTURAL ZOOLOGY. Translated by J. R. AINSWORTH DAVIS, M.A. With an Introduction by ELEANOR A. ORMEROD, F.E.S. With 155 Illustrations. *Cr. 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

C. G. Botting, B.A. JUNIOR LATIN EXAMINATION PAPERS. *Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. [Junior Examination Series.

E. M. Bowden. THE EXAMPLE OF BUDDHA: Being Quotations from Buddhist Literature for each Day in the Year. *Third Edition. 16mo.* 2s. 6d.

E. Bowmaker. THE HOUSING OF THE WORKING CLASSES. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

F. G. Brabant, M.A. SUSSEX. Illustrated by E. H. NEW. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 3s.; *leather,* 3s. 6d. *net.* [Little Guides.
'A charming little book; as full of sound information as it is practical in conception.' —*Athenæum.*
'Accurate, complete, and agreeably written'—*Literature.*

Miss M. Brodrick and Miss Anderson Morton. A CONCISE HANDBOOK OF EGYPTIAN ARCHÆOLOGY. With many Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

H. W. Brooks. See F. J. Hamilton.

O. Browning, M.A. A SHORT HISTORY OF MEDIÆVAL ITALY, A.D. 1250-1530. *In Two Volumes. Crown 8vo.* 5*s. each.*

VOL. I. 1250-1409.—Guelphs and Ghibellines.

VOL. II. 1409-1530.—The Age of the Condottieri.

J. Buchan. See Isaak Walton.

Miss Bulley. See Lady Dilke.

John Bunyan. THE PILGRIM'S PROGRESS. Edited, with an Introduction, by C. H. FIRTH, M.A. With 39 Illustrations by R. ANNING BELL. *Cr. 8vo.* 6*s.*

'The best "Pilgrim's Progress."'—*Educational Times.*

G. J. Burch, M.A., F.R.S. A MANUAL OF ELECTRICAL SCIENCE. With numerous Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* [University Extension Series.

Gelett Burgess. GOOPS AND HOW TO BE THEM. With numerous Illustrations. *Small 4to.* 6*s.*

A. E. Burn, B.D., Examining Chaplain to the Bishop of Lichfield. AN INTRODUCTION TO THE HISTORY OF THE CREEDS. *Demy 8vo.* 10*s.* 6*d.* [Handbooks of Theology.

'This book may be expected to hold its place as an authority on its subject.'—*Spectator.*

J. H. Burn, B.D., F.R.S.E. A MANUAL OF CONSOLATION FROM THE SAINTS AND FATHERS. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2*s.*; *leather,* 2*s.* 6*d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

Robert Burns. THE POEMS OF ROBERT BURNS. Edited by ANDREW LANG and W. A. CRAIGIE. With Portrait. *Second Edition. Demy 8vo, gilt top.* 6*s.*

J. B. Bury. LL.D. See Gibbon.

Alfred Caldecott, D.D. THE PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION IN ENGLAND AND AMERICA. *Demy 8vo.* 10*s.* 6*d.* [Handbooks of Theology.

'Dr. Caldecott treats the subject as we have long hoped it would eventually be treated.'—*Church Times.*

'A lucid and informative account, which certainly deserves a place in every philosophical library.'—*Scotsman.*

D. S. Calderwood, Headmaster of the Normal School, Edinburgh. TEST CARDS IN EUCLID AND ALGEBRA. In three packets of 40, with Answers. 1*s.* each. Or in three Books, price 2*d.*, 2*d.*, and 3*d.*

R. M. and A. J. Carlyle, M.A. BISHOP LATIMER. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.* [Leaders of Religion.

C. C. Channer and M. E. Roberts. LACE-MAKING IN THE MIDLANDS, PAST AND PRESENT. With 16 full-page Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

'An interesting book, illustrated by fascinating photographs.'—*Speaker.*

Lord Chesterfield, THE LETTERS OF, TO HIS SON. Edited, with an Introduction, by C. STRACHEY, and Notes by A. CALTHROP. *Two Volumes. Crown 8vo.* 6*s. each.* [Methuen's Standard Library.

F. W. Christian. THE CAROLINE ISLANDS. With many Illustrations and Maps. *Demy 8vo.* 12*s.* 6*d. net.*

Cicero. DE ORATORE I. Translated by E. N. P. MOOR, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.* [Classical Translations.

SELECT ORATIONS (Pro Milone, Pro Murena, Philippic II., In Catilinam). Translated by H. E. D. BLAKISTON, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Trinity College, Oxford. *Crown 8vo.* 5*s.* [Classical Translations.

DE NATURA DEORUM. Translated by F. BROOKS, M.A., late Scholar of Balliol College, Oxford. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.* [Classical Translations.

DE OFFICIIS. Translated by G. B. GARDINER, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.* [Classical Translations.

F. A. Clarke, M.A. BISHOP KEN. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.* [Leaders of Religion.

E. H. Colbeck, M.D. DISEASES OF THE HEART. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 12*s.*

W. G. Collingwood, M.A. THE LIFE OF JOHN RUSKIN. With Portraits. *Cheap Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6*s.*

J. C. Collins, M.A. See Tennyson.

W. E. Collins, M.A. THE BEGINNINGS OF ENGLISH CHRISTIANITY. With Map. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.* [Churchman's Library.

A. M. Cook, M.A. See E. C. Marchant.

R. W. Cooke-Taylor. THE FACTORY SYSTEM. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.* [Social Questions Series.

Marie Corelli. THE PASSING OF THE GREAT QUEEN: A Tribute to the Noble Life of Victoria Regina. *Small 4to.* 1*s.*

A CHRISTMAS GREETING. *Sm. 4to.* 1*s.*

Rosemary Cotes. DANTE'S GARDEN. With a Frontispiece. *Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo. cloth* 2*s.* 6*d.*; *leather,* 3*s.* 6*d. net.*

Harold Cox, B.A. LAND NATIONALIZATION. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.
[Social Questions Series.

W. J. Craig. See Shakespeare.

W. A. Craigie. A PRIMER OF BURNS. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

Mrs. Craik. JOHN HALIFAX, GENTLEMAN. Edited by ANNIE MATHESON. *Two Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each Volume, Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

Richard Crashaw, THE ENGLISH POEMS OF. Edited by EDWARD HUTTON. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

F. G. Crawford. See Mary C. Danson

C. G. Crump, M.A. See Thomas Ellwood.

F. H. E. Cunliffe, Fellow of All Souls' College, Oxford. THE HISTORY OF THE BOER WAR. With many Illustrations, Plans, and Portraits. *In 2 vols. Vol. I.,* 15s.

E. L. Cutts, D.D. AUGUSTINE OF CANTERBURY. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

The Brothers Dalziel. A RECORD OF FIFTY YEARS' WORK. With 150 Illustrations. *Large 4to.* 21s. *net.*

The record of the work of the celebrated Engravers, containing a Gallery of beautiful Pictures by F. Walker, Sir J. Millais, Lord Leighton, and other great Artists. The book is a history of the finest black-and-white work of the nineteenth century.

'The book is abundantly illustrated, and shows what wood engraving was at its best.' —*Scotsman.*

'A store of genial reminiscences. The designs of the various masters are exquisitely engraved. A worthy record of a period that is gone.'—*Standard.*

G. W. Daniell, M.A. BISHOP WILBERFORCE With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

Mary C. Danson and F. G. Crawford. FATHERS IN THE FAITH. *Small 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

Dante Alighieri. LA COMMEDIA DI DANTE. The Italian Text edited by PAGET TOYNBEE, Litt.D., M.A. *Demy 8vo. Gilt top.* 8s. 6d. *Also, Crown 8vo.* 6s. [Methuen's Standard Library.

THE INFERNO OF DANTE. Translated by H. F. CARY. Edited by PAGET TOYNBEE, Litt.D., M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

THE PURGATORIO OF DANTE Translated by H. F. CARY. Edited by PAGET TOYNBEE, Litt.D., M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

THE PARADISO OF DANTE. Translated by H. F. CARY. Edited by PAGET TOYNBEE, Litt.D., M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library

See also Paget Toynbee.

A. C. Deane. Edited by. A LITTLE BOOK OF LIGHT VERSE. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net* [Little Library.

Leon Delbos. THE METRIC SYSTEM. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

A theoretical and practical guide, for use in schools and by the general reader.

Demosthenes: THE OLYNTHIACS AND PHILIPPICS. Translated upon a new principle by OTHO HOLLAND. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

Demosthenes. AGAINST CONON AND CALLICLES. Edited with Notes and Vocabulary, by F. DARWIN SWIFT, M.A. *Fcap. 8vo.* 2s.

Charles Dickens.

THE ROCHESTER EDITION. *Crown 8vo. Each Volume, cloth,* 3s. 6d. With Introductions by GEORGE GISSING, Notes by F. G. KITTON, and Topographical Illustrations.

THE PICKWICK PAPERS. With Illustrations by E. H. NEW. *Two Volumes.*

'As pleasant a copy as any one could desire. The notes add much to the value of the edition, and Mr. New's illustrations are also historical. The volumes promise well for the success of the edition.'—*Scotsman.*

NICHOLAS NICKLEBY. With Illustrations by R. J. WILLIAMS. *Two Volumes.*

BLEAK HOUSE. With Illustrations by BEATRICE ALCOCK. *Two Volumes.*

OLIVER TWIST. With Illustrations by E. H. NEW.

THE OLD CURIOSITY SHOP. With Illustrations by G. M. BRIMELOW *Two Volumes.*

BARNABY RUDGE. With Illustrations by BEATRICE ALCOCK. *Two Volumes.*

G. L. Dickinson, M.A., Fellow of King's College, Cambridge. THE GREEK VIEW OF LIFE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

H. N. Dickson, F.R.S.E., F.R.Met. Soc. METEOROLOGY. The Elements of Weather and Climate. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

Lady Dilke, Miss Bulley, and Miss Whitley. WOMEN'S WORK. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

P. H. Ditchfield, M.A., F.S.A. ENGLISH VILLAGES. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A book which for its instructive and pictorial value should find a place in every village library.'—*Scotsman.*

'One of the best books on village antiquities we have seen.'—*Outlook.*

THE STORY OF OUR ENGLISH TOWNS. With Introduction by AUGUSTUS JESSOP, D.D. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

OLD ENGLISH CUSTOMS: Extant at the Present Time. An Account of Local Observances, Festival Customs, and Ancient Ceremonies yet Surviving in Great Britain. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

W. M. Dixon, M.A. A PRIMER OF TENNYSON. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

'Much sound and well-expressed criticism. The bibliography is a boon.'—*Speaker.*

ENGLISH POETRY FROM BLAKE TO BROWNING. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

E. Dowden, Litt.D. See Shakespeare.

J. Dowden, D.D., Lord Bishop of Edinburgh. THE WORKMANSHIP OF THE PRAYER BOOK: Its Literary and Liturgical Aspects. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Churchman's Library.

S. R. Driver, D.D., Canon of Christ Church, Regius Professor of Hebrew in the University of Oxford. SERMONS ON SUBJECTS CONNECTED WITH THE OLD TESTAMENT. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A welcome companion to the author's famous "Introduction."'—*Guardian.*

S. J. Duncan (Mrs. COTES), Author of 'A Voyage of Consolation.' ON THE OTHER SIDE OF THE LATCH. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

J. T. Dunn, D.Sc., **and V. A. Mundella.** GENERAL ELEMENTARY SCIENCE. With 114 Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Methuen's Science Primers.

The Earl of Durham. A REPORT ON CANADA. With an Introductory Note. *Demy 8vo.* 7s. 6d. *net.*

A reprint of the celebrated Report which Lord Durham made to the British Government on the state of British North America in 1839. It is probably the most important utterance on British colonial policy ever published.

W. A. Dutt. NORFOLK. Illustrated by B. C. BOULTER. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 3s.; *leather,* 3s. 6d. *net.* [Little Guides.

Clement Edwards. RAILWAY NATIONALIZATION. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

W. Douglas Edwards. COMMERCIAL LAW. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. [Commercial Series.

H. E. Egerton, M.A. A HISTORY OF BRITISH COLONIAL POLICY. *Demy 8vo.* 12s. 6d.

'It is a good book, distinguished by accuracy in detail, clear arrangement of facts, and a broad grasp of principles.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

Thomas Ellwood, THE HISTORY OF THE LIFE OF. Edited by C. G. CRUMP, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 6s. [Methuen's Standard Library.

This edition is the only one which contains the complete book as originally published. It has a long Introduction and many Footnotes.

E. Engel. A HISTORY OF ENGLISH LITERATURE: From its Beginning to Tennyson. Translated from the German. *Demy 8vo.* 7s. 6d. *net.*

This is a very complete and convenient sketch of the evolution of our literature from early days. The treatment is biographical as well as critical, and is rendered more interesting by the quotation of characteristic passages from the chief authors.

W. H. Fairbrother, M.A. THE PHILOSOPHY OF T. H. GREEN. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

Susan Ferrier. MARRIAGE. Edited by Miss GOODRICH FREER and Lord IDDESLEIGH. *Two Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each volume, cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

C. H. Firth, M.A. CROMWELL'S ARMY: A History of the English Soldier during the Civil Wars, the Commonwealth, and the Protectorate. *Crown 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

An elaborate study and description of Cromwell's army by which the victory of the Parliament was secured. The 'New Model' is described in minute detail, and the author, who is one of the most distinguished historians of the day, has made great use of unpublished MSS.

G. W. Fisher, M.A. ANNALS OF SHREWSBURY SCHOOL. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 10s. 6d.

Edward FitzGerald. THE RUBAIYAT OF OMAR KHAYYAM. With a Commentary by H. M. BATSON, and a Biography of Omar by E. D. ROSS. 6s.

T. F. Henderson. A LITTLE BOOK OF SCOTTISH VERSE. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

See also D. M. Moir.

W. E. Henley. ENGLISH LYRICS. *Crown 8vo. Gilt top. 3s. 6d.*

W. E. Henley and C. Whibley. A BOOK OF ENGLISH PROSE. *Crown 8vo. Buckram, gilt top. 6s.*

H. H. Henson, M.A., Fellow of All Souls', Oxford, Canon of Westminster. APOSTOLIC CHRISTIANITY: As Illustrated by the Epistles of St. Paul to the Corinthians. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

LIGHT AND LEAVEN: HISTORICAL AND SOCIAL SERMONS. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

DISCIPLINE AND LAW. *Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.*

George Herbert. THE TEMPLE. Edited, with an Introduction and Notes, by E. C. S. GIBSON, D.D., Vicar of Leeds. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

This edition contains Walton's Life of Herbert, and the text is that of the first edition.

Herodotus: EASY SELECTIONS. With Vocabulary. By A. C. LIDDELL, M.A. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.*

W. A. S. Hewins, B.A. ENGLISH TRADE AND FINANCE IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. *Crown 8vo.* [University Extension Series.

T. Hilbert. THE AIR GUN: or, How the Mastermans and Dobson Major nearly lost their Holidays. Illustrated. *Square Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Little Blue Books.

Clare Hill, Registered Teacher to the City and Guilds of London Institute. MILLINERY, THEORETICAL, AND PRACTICAL. With numerous Diagrams. *Crown 8vo. 2s.* [Textbooks of Technology.

Henry Hill, B.A., Headmaster of the Boy's High School, Worcester, Cape Colony. A SOUTH AFRICAN ARITHMETIC. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

This book has been specially written for use in South African schools.

G. Birkbeck Hill, LL.D. See Gibbon.

Howard C. Hillegas. WITH THE BOER FORCES. With 24 Illustrations. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.*

S. L. Hinde. THE FALL OF THE CONGO ARABS. With Plans, etc. *Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

L. T. Hobhouse, Fellow of C.C.C., Oxford. THE THEORY OF KNOWLEDGE. *Demy 8vo. 21s.*

J. A. Hobson, M.A. PROBLEMS OF POVERTY: An Inquiry into the Industrial Condition of the Poor. *Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Social Questions Series and University Extension Series.

THE PROBLEM OF THE UNEMPLOYED. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Social Questions Series.

T. Hodgkin, D.C.L. GEORGE FOX, THE QUAKER. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.* [Leaders of Religion.

Chester Holcombe. THE REAL CHINESE QUESTION. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

'It is an important addition to the materials before the public for forming an opinion on a most difficult and pressing problem.'—*Times.*

Sir T. H. Holdich, K.C.I.E. THE INDIAN BORDERLAND: being a Personal Record of Twenty Years. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo. 15s. net*

'Interesting and inspiriting from cover to cover, it will assuredly take its place as the classical work on the history of the Indian frontier.'—*Pilot.*

Canon Scott Holland. LYRA APOSTOLICA. With an Introduction. Notes by H. C. BEECHING, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

G. J. Holyoake. THE CO-OPERATIVE MOVEMENT TO-DAY. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Social Questions Series.

Horace: THE ODES AND EPODES. Translated by A. GODLEY, M.A., Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxford. *Crown 8vo. 2s.* [Classical Translations.

E. L. S. Horsburgh, M.A. WATERLOO: A Narrative and Criticism. With Plans. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 5s.*

'A brilliant essay—simple, sound, and thorough.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

THE LIFE OF SAVONAROLA. With Portraits and Illustrations. *Fcap. 8vo. Cloth, 3s. 6d.; leather, 4s. net.* [Little Biographies.

R. F. Horton, D.D. JOHN HOWE. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.* [Leaders of Religion.

Alexander Hosie. MANCHURIA. With Illustrations and a Map. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d. net.*

G. Howell. TRADE UNIONISM—NEW AND OLD. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

H. G. Hutchinson. THE GOLFING PILGRIM. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

A. W. Hutton, M.A. CARDINAL MANNING. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

See also TAULER.

Edward Hutton. See Richard Crashaw.

R. H. Hutton. CARDINAL NEWMAN. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

W. H. Hutton, M.A. THE LIFE OF SIR THOMAS MORE. With Portraits. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 5s.

WILLIAM LAUD. With Portrait. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

Henrik Ibsen. BRAND. A Drama. Translated by WILLIAM WILSON. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

Lord Iddesleigh. See Susan Ferrier.

W. R. Inge, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Hertford College, Oxford. CHRISTIAN MYSTICISM. The Bampton Lectures for 1899. *Demy 8vo.* 12s. 6d. *net.*

'It is fully worthy of the best traditions connected with the Bampton Lectureship.'—*Record.*

A. D. Innes, M.A. A HISTORY OF THE BRITISH IN INDIA. With Maps and Plans. *Crown 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

'Written in a vigorous and effective style . . . a thoughtful and impartial account.'—*Spectator.*

'Mr. Innes has done a difficult piece of work well. He has taken the history into his mind; given it shape, feature, and vitality there; therefore it comes alive and fresh from his mind.'—*Scotsman.*

S. Jackson, M.A. A PRIMER OF BUSINESS. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d. [Commercial Series.

F. Jacob, M.A. JUNIOR FRENCH EXAMINATION PAPERS. *Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. [Junior Examination Series.

J. Stephen Jeans. TRUSTS, POOLS, AND CORNERS. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

R. L. Jefferson. A NEW RIDE TO KHIVA. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

E. Jenks, M.A., Professor of Law at University College, Liverpool. ENGLISH LOCAL GOVERNMENT. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

C. S. Jerram, M.A. See Pascal.

Augustus Jessopp, D.D. JOHN DONNE. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

F. B. Jevons, M.A., Litt.D., Principal of Hatfield Hall, Durham. EVOLUTION. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Churchman's Library.

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE HISTORY OF RELIGION. *Second Edition. Demy 8vo.* 10s. 6d. [Handbooks of Theology.

'The merit of this book lies in the penetration, the singular acuteness and force of the author's judgment. He is at once critical and luminous, at once just and suggestive. A comprehensive and thorough book.'—*Birmingham Post.*

Sir H. H. Johnston, K.C.B. BRITISH CENTRAL AFRICA. With nearly 200 Illustrations and Six Maps. *Second Edition. Crown 4to.* 18s. *net.*

H. Jones. A GUIDE TO PROFESSIONS AND BUSINESS. *Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d. [Commercial Series.

F. W. Joyce, M.A. THE LIFE OF SIR FREDERICK GORE OUSELEY. 7s. 6d.

Lady Julian of Norwich. REVELATIONS OF DIVINE LOVE. Edited by GRACE WARRACK. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

A partially modernised version, from the MS. in the British Museum of a book which Dr. Dalgairns terms 'One of the most remarkable books of the Middle Ages.' Mr. Inge in his Bampton Lectures on Christian Mysticism calls it 'The beautiful but little known *Revelations.*'

M. Kaufmann. SOCIALISM AND MODERN THOUGHT. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

J. F. Keating, D.D. THE AGAPE AND THE EUCHARIST. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

John Keble. THE CHRISTIAN YEAR. With an Introduction and Notes by W. LOCK, D.D., Warden of Keble College. Illustrated by R. ANNING BELL. *Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 3s. 6d; *padded morocco,* 5s.

'The present edition is annotated with all the care and insight to be expected from Dr. Lock.'—*Guardian.*

LYRA INNOCENTIUM. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by WALTER LOCK, D.D., Warden of Keble College, Oxford. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Library of Devotion.

'This sweet and fragrant book has never been published more attractively.'—*Academy.*

THE CHRISTIAN YEAR. With Introduction and Notes by WALTER LOCK, D.D., Warden of Keble College. *Second Edition. Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

Thomas À Kempis. THE IMITATION OF CHRIST. With an Introduction by DEAN FARRAR. Illustrated by C. M. GERE. *Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d. net; padded morocco, 5s.*

'Amongst all the innumerable English editions of the "Imitation," there can have been few which were prettier than this one, printed in strong and handsome type, with all the glory of red initials.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

THE IMITATION OF CHRIST. A Revised Translation by C. BIGG, D.D., Canon of Christ Church. With an Introduction. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

A new edition, carefully revised and set in large type, of Dr. Bigg's well-known version.

'Dignified, harmonious, and scholarly.' —*Church Review.*

THE IMITATION OF CHRIST. A Revised Translation, with an Introduction by C. BIGG, D.D., late Student of Christ Church. *Second Edition. Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

A practically new translation of this book which the reader has, almost for the first time, exactly in the shape in which it left the hands of the author.

James Houghton Kennedy, D.D., Assistant Lecturer in Divinity in the University of Dublin. ST. PAUL'S SECOND AND THIRD EPISTLES TO THE CORINTHIANS. With Introduction, Dissertations and Notes. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

C. W. Kimmins, M.A. THE CHEMISTRY OF LIFE AND HEALTH. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [University Extension Series.

A. W. Kinglake. EOTHEN. With an Introduction and Notes. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

Rudyard Kipling. BARRACK-ROOM BALLADS. *73rd Thousand. Crown 8vo. 6s.; leather, 6s. net.*

'Mr. Kipling's verse is strong, vivid, full of character. . . . Unmistakable genius rings in every line.'—*Times.*

'The ballads teem with imagination, they palpitate with emotion. We read them with laughter and tears: the metres throb in our pulses, the cunningly ordered words tingle with life; and if this be not poetry, what is?'—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

THE SEVEN SEAS. *62nd Thousand. Crown 8vo. Buckram, gilt top, 5s.; leather, 6s. net.*

'The Empire has found a singer; it is no depreciation of the songs to say that statesmen may have, one way or other, to take account of them.'—

Manchester Guardian.

F. G. Kitton. See Dickens.

W. J. Knox Little. See St. Francis de Sales.

Charles Lamb. THE ESSAYS OF ELIA. With over 100 Illustrations by A. GASTON JONES, and an Introduction by E. V. LUCAS. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

'This edition is in many respects of peculiar beauty.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

'It is in every way an admirable edition and the illustrations are delightful.'—

Literature.

ELIA, AND THE LAST ESSAYS OF ELIA. Edited by E. V. LUCAS. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

THE KING AND QUEEN OF HEARTS: An 1805 Book for Children. Illustrated by WILLIAM MULREADY. A new edition, in facsimile, edited by E. V. LUCAS. *1s. 6d.*

This little book is a literary curiosity, and has been discovered and identified as the work of Charles Lamb by E. V. LUCAS. It is an exact facsimile of the original edition, which was illustrated by Mulready.

Professor Lambros. ECTHESIS CHRONICA. Edited by. *Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.* [Byzantine Texts.

Stanley Lane-Poole. THE LIFE OF SIR HARRY PARKES. *A New and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.*

A HISTORY OF EGYPT IN THE MIDDLE AGES. Fully Illustrated. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

F. Langbridge, M.A. BALLADS OF THE BRAVE: Poems of Chivalry, Enterprise, Courage, and Constancy. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.*

'The book is full of splendid things.'—*World.*

William Law. A SERIOUS CALL TO A DEVOUT AND HOLY LIFE. Edited, with an Introduction, by C. BIGG, D.D., late Student of Christ Church. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

This is a reprint, word for word and line for line, of the *Editio Princeps.*

G. S. Layard. THE LIFE OF MRS. LYNN LINTON. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

'Mrs. Lynn Linton is here presented to us in all her moods. She lives in the book; she is presented to us so that we really know her.'—*Literature.*

Captain Melville Lee. A HISTORY OF POLICE IN ENGLAND. *Crown 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

'A learned book, comprising many curious details to interest the general reader as well as the student who will consult it for exact information.'—*Daily News.*

'The book rests on accurate research and gives a vast array of facts and statistics.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

V. B. Lewes, M.A. AIR AND WATER. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

Walter Lock, D.D., Warden of Keble College. ST. PAUL, THE MASTER-BUILDER. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

See also Keble and Oxford Commentaries.

JOHN KEBLE. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

E. V. Lucas. See Jane Austen and Mrs. Gaskell and Charles Lamb.

Lucian. SIX DIALOGUES (Nigrinus, Icaro-Menippus, The Cock, The Ship, The Parasite, The Lover of Falsehood). Translated by S. T. Irwin, M.A., Assistant Master at Clifton; late Scholar of Exeter College, Oxford. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Classical Translations.

L. W. Lyde, M.A. A COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. [Commercial Series.

Hon. Mrs. Lyttelton. WOMEN AND THEIR WORK. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

'Thoughtful, interesting, practical.'—*Guardian.*

'The book is full of sound precept given with sympathy and wit.'—*Pilot.*

J. E. B. M'Allen, M.A. THE PRINCIPLES OF BOOKKEEPING BY DOUBLE ENTRY. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. [Commercial Series.

F. MacCunn. JOHN KNOX. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

A. M. Mackay. THE CHURCHMAN'S INTRODUCTION TO THE OLD TESTAMENT. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Churchman's Library.

'The book throughout is frank and courageous.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

Laurie Magnus, M.A. A PRIMER OF WORDSWORTH. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

J. P. Mahaffy, Litt.D. A HISTORY OF THE EGYPT OF THE PTOLEMIES. Fully Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

F. W. Maitland, LL.D., Downing Professor of the Laws of England in the University of Cambridge. CANON LAW IN ENGLAND. *Royal 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

H. E. Malden, M.A. ENGLISH RECORDS. A Companion to the History of England. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

THE ENGLISH CITIZEN: HIS RIGHTS AND DUTIES. *Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

E. C. Marchant, M.A., Fellow of Peterhouse, Cambridge, and Assistant Master at St. Paul's School. A GREEK ANTHOLOGY. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

E. C. Marchant, M.A., and **A. M. Cook,** M.A. PASSAGES FOR UNSEEN TRANSLATION. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

'We know no book of this class better fitted for use in the higher forms of schools.'—*Guardian.*

J. E. Marr, F.R.S., Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge. THE SCIENTIFIC STUDY OF SCENERY. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A volume, moderate in size and readable in style, which will be acceptable alike to the student of geology and geography, and to the tourist.'—*Athenæum.*

A. J. Mason. THOMAS CRANMER. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

George Massee. THE EVOLUTION OF PLANT LIFE: Lower Forms. With Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

C. F. G. Masterman, M.A. TENNYSON AS A RELIGIOUS TEACHER. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A thoughtful and penetrating appreciation, full of interest and suggestion.'—*World.*

Annie Matheson. See Mrs. Craik.

Emma S. Mellows. A SHORT STORY OF ENGLISH LITERATURE. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

'A lucid and well-arranged account of the growth of English literature.'—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

L. C. Miall, F.R.S. See Gilbert White.

E. B. Michell. THE ART AND PRACTICE OF HAWKING. With 3 Photogravures by G. E. LODGE, and other Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 10s. 6d.

J. G. Millais. THE LIFE AND LETTERS OF SIR JOHN EVERETT MILLAIS, President of the Royal Academy. With 319 Illustrations, of which 9 are Photogravure. 2 vols. *Royal 8vo.* 30s. *net.*

'This splendid work.'—*World.*

'Of such absorbing interest is it, of such completeness in scope and beauty. Special tribute must be paid to the extraordinary completeness of the illustrations.'—*Graphic.*

J. G. Milne, M.A. A HISTORY OF ROMAN EGYPT. Fully Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

P. Chalmers Mitchell, M.A. OUTLINES OF BIOLOGY. Illustrated. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

A text-book designed to cover the Schedule issued by the Royal College of Physicians and Surgeons.

D. M. Moir. MANSIE WAUCH. Edited by T. F. HENDERSON. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s. 6d. *net; leather,* 3s. 6d. *net.*

[Little Library.

H. R. Moore. BACK TO THE LAND: An Inquiry into the cure for Rural Depopulation. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

[Social Questions Series.

W. R. Morfill, Oriel College, Oxford. A HISTORY OF RUSSIA FROM PETER THE GREAT TO ALEXANDER II. With Maps and Plans. *Crown 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

This history, is founded on a study of original documents, and though necessarily brief, is the most comprehensive narrative in existence. Considerable attention has been paid to the social and literary development of the country, and the recent expansion of Russia in Asia.

R. J. Morich, late of Clifton College. GERMAN EXAMINATION PAPERS IN MISCELLANEOUS GRAMMAR AND IDIOMS. *Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

[School Examination Series.

A KEY, issued to Tutors and Private Students only, to be had on application to the Publishers. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s. *net.*

Miss Anderson Morton. See Miss Brodrick.

H. C. G. Moule, D.D. CHARLES SIMEON. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

M. M. Pattison Muir, M.A. THE CHEMISTRY OF FIRE. The Elementary Principles of Chemistry. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

[University Extension Series.

V. A. Mundella, M.A. See J. T. Dunn.

W. G. Neal. See R. N. Hall.

H. W. Nevinson. LADYSMITH: The Diary of a Siege. With 16 Illustrations and a Plan. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* [illegible]

James Northcote, R.A., THE CONVERSATIONS OF, AND JAMES WARD. Edited by ERNEST FLETCHER. With two Portraits. *Demy 8vo.* 10s. 6d.

'Mr. Fletcher's book will range and rival with Hazlitt's.'—*Globe.*

'Every reader, with any taste for art, will find the book engrossing.'—*Yorkshire Post.*

A. H. Norway, Author of 'Highways and Byways in Devon and Cornwall.' NAPLES: PAST AND PRESENT. With 40 Illustrations by A. G. FERARD. *Crown 8vo.* [illegible]

Standish O'Grady. THE STORY OF IRELAND. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

Mrs. Oliphant. THOMAS CHALMERS. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

[Leaders of Religion.

C. W. Oman, M.A., Fellow of All Souls, Oxford. A HISTORY OF THE ART OF WAR. Vol. II.: The Middle Ages from the Fourth to the Fourteenth Century. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo.* 21s.

'The whole art of war in its historic evolution has never been treated on such an ample and comprehensive scale, and we question if any recent contribution to the exact history of the world has possessed more enduring value.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

Prince Henri of Orleans. FROM TONKIN TO INDIA. Translated by HAMLEY BENT, M.A. With 100 Illustrations and a Map. *Crown 4to, gilt top.* 25s.

R. L. Ottley, M.A., late Fellow of Magdalen College, Oxon., and Principal of Pusey House. THE DOCTRINE OF THE INCARNATION. *Second and cheaper Edition. Demy 8vo.* 12s. 6d.

[Handbooks of Theology.

'A clear and remarkably full account of the main currents of speculation. Scholarly precision . . . genuine tolerance . . . intense interest in his subject—are Mr. Ottley's merits.'—*Guardian.*

LANCELOT ANDREWES. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

[Leaders of Religion.

J. H. Overton, M.A. JOHN WESLEY. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

[Leaders of Religion.

M. H. Oxford, of Guy's Hospital. A HANDBOOK OF NURSING. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

'The most useful work of the kind that we have seen. A most valuable and practical manual.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

J. C. Pakes. THE SCIENCE OF HYGIENE. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 15*s.*

'A thoroughgoing working text-book of the subject, practical and well-stocked.'—*Scotsman.*

E. Léon Parmentier and M. Bidez. EVAGRIUS. Edited by. *Demy 8vo.* 10*s.* 6*d. net.* [Byzantine Texts.

W. Paul. See Laurence Sterne.

H. Pearce, M.A. THE ANNALS OF CHRIST'S HOSPITAL. With many Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 7*s.* 6*d.*

'A well-written, copious, authentic history.'—*Times.*

R. Peary, Gold Medallist of the Royal Geographical Society. NORTHWARD OVER THE GREAT ICE. With over 800 Illustrations. 2 *vols. Royal 8vo.* 32*s. net.*

'His book will take its place among the permanent literature of Arctic exploration.'—*Times.*

Sidney Peel, late Fellow of Trinity College, Oxford, and Secretary to the Royal Commission on the Licensing Laws. PRACTICAL LICENSING REFORM. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1*s.* 6*d.*

M. Perugini. SELECTIONS FROM WILLIAM BLAKE. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1*s.* 6*d. net; leather,* 2*s.* 6*d. net.* [Little Library.

J. P. Peters, D.D. THE OLD TESTAMENT AND THE NEW SCHOLARSHIP. *Crown 8vo.* 6*s.* [Churchman's Library.

'Every page reveals wide reading, used with sound and scholarly judgment.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

W. M. Flinders Petrie, D.C.L., LL.D., Professor of Egyptology at University College. A HISTORY OF EGYPT, FROM THE EARLIEST TIMES TO THE PRESENT DAY. Fully Illustrated. *In six volumes. Crown 8vo.* 6*s. each.*

'A history written in the spirit of scientific precision so worthily represented by Dr. Petrie and his school cannot but promote sound and accurate study, and supply a vacant place in the English literature of Egyptology.'—*Times.*

VOL. I. PREHISTORIC TIMES TO XVITH DYNASTY. *Fourth Edition.*
VOL. II. THE XVIITH AND XVIIITH DYNASTIES. *Third Edition.*
VOL. IV. THE EGYPT OF THE PTOLEMIES. J. P. MAHAFFY, Litt.D.
VOL. V. ROMAN EGYPT. J. G. MILNE, M.A.
VOL. VI. EGYPT IN THE MIDDLE AGES. STANLEY LANE-POOLE, M.A.

RELIGION AND CONSCIENCE IN ANCIENT EGYPT. Fully Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

SYRIA AND EGYPT, FROM THE TELL EL AMARNA TABLETS. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.*

EGYPTIAN TALES. Illustrated by TRISTRAM ELLIS. *In Two Volumes. Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d. each.*

EGYPTIAN DECORATIVE ART. With 120 Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

'In these lectures he displays rare skill in elucidating the development of decorative art in Egypt.'—*Times.*

Philip Pienaar. WITH STEYN AND DE WET. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

A narrative of the adventures of a Boer telegraphist of the Orange Free State during the war.

Plautus. THE CAPTIVI. Edited, with an Introduction, Textual Notes, and a Commentary, by W. M. LINDSAY, Fellow of Jesus College, Oxford. *Demy 8vo.* 10*s.* 6*d. net.*

For this edition all the important MSS. have been re-collated. An appendix deals with the accentual element in early Latin verse. The Commentary is very full.

'A work of great erudition and fine scholarship.'—*Scotsman.*

THE CAPTIVI. Adapted for Lower Forms, by J. H. FREESE, M.A., late Fellow of St. John's, Cambridge. 1*s.* 6*d.*

J. T. Plowden-Wardlaw, B.A., King's College, Cambridge. EXAMINATION PAPERS IN ENGLISH HISTORY. *Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.* [School Examination Series.

M. C. Potter, M.A., F.L.S. A TEXT-BOOK OF AGRICULTURAL BOTANY. Illustrated. *2nd Edition. Crown 8vo.* 4*s.* 6*d.* [University Extension Series.

L. L. Price, M.A., Fellow of Oriel College, Oxon. A HISTORY OF ENGLISH POLITICAL ECONOMY. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2*s.* 6*d.* [University Extension Series.

"Q." THE GOLDEN POMP. A Procession of English Lyrics. Arranged by A. T. QUILLER COUCH. *Crown 8vo. Buckram,* 6*s.*

R. B. Rackham, M.A. THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. With Introduction and Notes. *Demy 8vo.* 12*s.* 6*d.* [Oxford Commentaries.

'A really helpful book. Both introduction and commentary are marked by common sense and adequate knowledge.'—*Guardian.*

R. W. Randolph, D.D., Principal of the Theological College, Ely. THE PSALMS OF DAVID. With an Introduction and Notes. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

A devotional and practical edition of the Prayer Book version of the Psalms.

Hastings Rashdall, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of New College, Oxford. DOCTRINE AND DEVELOPMENT. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

W. Reason, M.A. UNIVERSITY AND SOCIAL SETTLEMENTS. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Social Questions Series.

Charles Richardson. THE ENGLISH TURF. With numerous Illustrations and Plans. *Demy 8vo. 15s.*

'From its sensible introduction to its very complex index, this is about the best book that we are likely for some time to see upon the subject with which it deals.'—*Athenæum.*

M. E. Roberts. See C. C. Channer.

A. Robertson, D.D., Principal of King's College, London. REGNUM DEI. The Bampton Lectures of 1901. *Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d. net.*

'A notable volume. Its chief value and interest is in its historic treatment of its great theme.'—*Daily News.*

'It is altogether a solid piece of work and a valuable contribution to the history of Christian thought.'—*Scotsman.*

Sir G. S. Robertson, K.C.S.I. CHITRAL: The Story of a Minor Siege. With numerous Illustrations, Map and Plans. *Second Edition. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

'A book which the Elizabethans would have thought wonderful. More thrilling, more piquant, and more human than any novel.'—*Newcastle Chronicle.*

J. W. Robertson-Scott. THE PEOPLE OF CHINA. With a Map. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

A. W. Robinson, Vicar of All Hallows, Barking. THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS. Explained. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.* [Churchman's Bible.

'The most attractive, sensible, and instructive manual for people at large, which we have ever seen.'—*Church Gazette.*

Cecilia Robinson. THE MINISTRY OF DEACONESSES. With an Introduction by the Lord Bishop of Winchester. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

G. Rodwell, B.A. NEW TESTAMENT GREEK. A Course for Beginners. With a Preface by WALTER LOCK, D.D., Warden of Keble College. *Fcap. 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

Edward Rose. THE ROSE READER. With numerous Illustrations. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. Also in 4 Parts. Parts I. and II. 6d. each; Part III. 8d.; Part IV. [illegible]*

A reader on a new and original plan.

The distinctive feature of this book is the entire avoidance of irregularly-spelt words until the pupil has thoroughly mastered the principle of reading, and learned to enjoy it. The reading of connected sentences begins from the first page, before the entire alphabet is introduced.

E. Denison Ross, M.A. See W. Beckford, A. W. Kinglake, and F. H. Skrine.

A. E. Rubie, M.A., Head Master of the Royal Naval School, Eltham. THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK. Edited by. With three Maps. *Crown 8vo. 1s. 6d.* [Methuen's Junior School Books.

W. Clark Russell. THE LIFE OF ADMIRAL LORD COLLINGWOOD. With Illustrations by F. BRANGWYN. *Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo. 6s.*

'A book which we should like to see in the hands of every boy in the country.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

Viscount St. Cyres. THE LIFE OF FRANÇOIS DE FENELON. Illustrated. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

'A work of high historical and lively interest.'—*Outlook.*

'A most interesting life of a most interesting personage.'—*Scotsman.*

'We have in this admirable volume a most valuable addition to our historical portrait gallery.'—*Daily News.*

St. Francis de Sales. ON THE LOVE OF GOD. Edited by W. J. KNOX-LITTLE, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

J. Sargeaunt, M.A. ANNALS OF WESTMINSTER SCHOOL. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo. 7s. 6d.*

C. Sathas. THE HISTORY OF PSELLUS. *Demy 8vo. 15s. net.* [Byzantine Texts.

H. G. Seeley, F.R.S. DRAGONS OF THE AIR. With many Illustrations. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

A popular history of the most remarkable flying animals which ever lived. Their relations to mammals, birds, and reptiles, living and extinct, are shown by an original series of illustrations. The scattered remains preserved in Europe and the United States have been put together accurately to show the varied forms of the animals. The book is a natural history of these extinct animals which flew by means of a single finger.

P. Sells, M.A. THE MECHANICS OF DAILY LIFE. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

mund Selous. TOMMY SMITH'S ANIMALS. Illustrated by G. W. ORD. *Second Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

'A quaint, fascinating little book: a nursery classic.'—*Athenæum.*

illiam Shakespeare.

HE ARDEN EDITION.

'No edition of Shakespeare is likely to prove more attractive and satisfactory than this one. It is beautifully printed and paged and handsomely and simply bound.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

Demy 8vo. 3s. 6d. *each volume.* General Editor, W. J. CRAIG. An Edition of Shakespeare in single Plays. Edited with a full Introduction, Textual Notes, and a Commentary at the foot of the page. The first volumes are:—

HAMLET. Edited by EDWARD DOWDEN, Litt.D.

ROMEO AND JULIET. Edited by EDWARD DOWDEN, Litt.D.

KING LEAR. Edited by W. J. CRAIG.

JULIUS CAESAR. Edited by M. MACMILLAN, M.A.

THE TEMPEST. Edited by MORTON LUCE.

A. Sharp. VICTORIAN POETS. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

J. S. Shedlock. THE PIANOFORTE SONATA: Its Origin and Development. *Crown 8vo.* 5s.

'This work should be in the possession of every musician and amateur. A concise and lucid history and a very valuable work for reference.'—*Athenæum.*

Arthur Sherwell, M.A. LIFE IN WEST LONDON. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [Social Questions Series.

F. H. Skrine and E. D. Ross. THE HEART OF ASIA. With Maps and many Illustrations by VERESTCHAGIN. *Large Crown 8vo.* 10s. 6d. *net.*

'This volume will form a landmark in our knowledge of Central Asia. . . . Illuminating and convincing.'—*Times.*

Evan Small, M.A. THE EARTH. An Introduction to Physiography. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [University Extension Series.

Nowell C. Smith, Fellow of New College, Oxford. SELECTIONS FROM WORDSWORTH. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

Sophocles. ELECTRA AND AJAX. Translated by E. D. A. MORSHEAD, M.A., Assistant Master at Winchester. 2s. 6d. [Classical Translations.

R. Southey. ENGLISH SEAMEN (Howard, Clifford, Hawkins, Drake, Cavendish). Edited, with an Introduction, by DAVID HANNAY. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A brave, inspiriting book.'—*Black and White.*

C. H. Spence, M.A., Clifton College. HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY EXAMINATION PAPERS. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

W. A. Spooner, M.A., Fellow of New College, Oxford. BISHOP BUTLER. With Portrait. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d. [Leaders of Religion.

J. W. Stanbridge, B.D., Rector of Bainton, Canon of York, and sometime Fellow of St. John's College, Oxford. A BOOK OF DEVOTIONS. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 2s.; *leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Library of Devotion.

'It is probably the best book of its kind. It deserves high commendation.'—*Church Gazette.*

See also Cardinal Bona.

'Stancliff.' GOLF DO'S AND DONT'S. *Fcap. 8vo.* 1s.

A. M. M. Stedman, M.A.

INITIA LATINA: Easy Lessons on Elementary Accidence. *Fifth Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s.

FIRST LATIN LESSONS. *Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s.

FIRST LATIN READER. With Notes adapted to the Shorter Latin Primer and Vocabulary. *Fifth Edition revised. 18mo.* 1s. 6d.

EASY SELECTIONS FROM CÆSAR. Part I. The Helvetian War. *Second Edition. 18mo.* 1s.

EASY SELECTIONS FROM LIVY. Part I. The Kings of Rome. *18mo. Second Edition.* 1s. 6d.

EASY LATIN PASSAGES FOR UNSEEN TRANSLATION. *Eighth Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

EXEMPLA LATINA. First Lessons in Latin Accidence. With Vocabulary. *Crown 8vo.* 1s.

EASY LATIN EXERCISES ON THE SYNTAX OF THE SHORTER AND REVISED LATIN PRIMER. With Vocabulary. *Eighth and Cheaper Edition, re-written. Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d. KEY 3s. *net. Original Edition.* 2s. 6d.

THE LATIN COMPOUND SENTENCE: Rules and Exercises. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d. With Vocabulary. 2s.

NOTANDA QUAEDAM: Miscellaneous Latin Exercises on Common Rules and Idioms. *Fourth Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d. With Vocabulary. 2s. Key, 2s. *net.*

LATIN VOCABULARIES FOR REPETITION: Arranged according to Subjects. *Tenth Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

A VOCABULARY OF LATIN IDIOMS. *18mo. Second Edition.* 1s.

STEPS TO GREEK. *Second Edition, revised. 18mo.* 1s.

A SHORTER GREEK PRIMER. *Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

EASY GREEK EXERCISES. By C. G. BOTTING, B.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

EASY GREEK PASSAGES FOR UNSEEN TRANSLATION. *Third Edition, revised. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

GREEK VOCABULARIES FOR REPETITION. Arranged according to Subjects. *Third Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

GREEK TESTAMENT SELECTIONS. For the use of Schools. With Introduction, Notes, and Vocabulary. *Third Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

STEPS TO FRENCH. *Fifth Edition. 18mo.* 8d.

FIRST FRENCH LESSONS. *Fifth Edition, revised. Crown 8vo.* 1s.

EASY FRENCH PASSAGES FOR UNSEEN TRANSLATION. *Fourth Edition, revised. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

EASY FRENCH EXERCISES ON ELEMENTARY SYNTAX. With Vocabulary. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. KEY. 3s. *net.*

FRENCH VOCABULARIES FOR REPETITION: Arranged according to Subjects. *Tenth Edition. Fcap. 8vo.* 1s.

FRENCH EXAMINATION PAPERS IN MISCELLANEOUS GRAMMAR AND IDIOMS. *Eleventh Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

A KEY, issued to Tutors and Private Students only, to be had on application to the Publishers. *Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s. *net.*

GENERAL KNOWLEDGE EXAMINATION PAPERS. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

KEY (*Second Edition*) issued as above. 7s. *net.*

GREEK EXAMINATION PAPERS IN MISCELLANEOUS GRAMMAR AND IDIOMS. *Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

KEY (*Second Edition*) issued as above. 6s. *net.*

LATIN EXAMINATION PAPERS IN MISCELLANEOUS GRAMMAR AND IDIOMS. *Tenth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

KEY (*Fourth Edition*) issued as above. 6s. *net.*

R. Elliott Steel, M.A., F.C.S. THE WORLD OF SCIENCE. Including Chemistry, Heat, Light, Sound, Magnetism, Electricity, Botany, Zoology, Physiology, Astronomy, and Geology. 147 Illustrations. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

PHYSICS EXAMINATION PAPERS. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d. [School Examination Series.

C. Stephenson, of the Technical College, Bradford, and **F. Suddards,** of the Yorkshire College, Leeds. ORNAMENTAL DESIGN FOR WOVEN FABRICS. *Demy 8vo. Second Edition.* 7s. 6d.

J. Stephenson, M.A. THE CHIEF TRUTHS OF THE CHRISTIAN FAITH. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

An attempt to present in clear and popular form the main truths of the Faith. The book is intended for lay workers in the Church, for educated parents and for teachers generally.

Laurence Sterne. A SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY. Edited by H. W. PAUL. *Pott 8vo. Cloth,* 1s. 6d. *net; leather,* 2s. 6d. *net.* [Little Library.

W. Sterry, M.A. ANNALS OF ETON COLLEGE. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo.* 7s. 6d.

R. L. Stevenson. THE LETTERS OF ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON TO HIS FAMILY AND FRIENDS. Selected and Edited, with Notes and Introductions, by SIDNEY COLVIN. *Sixth and Cheaper Edition. Crown 8vo.* 12s.

LIBRARY EDITION. *Demy 8vo. 2 vols.* 25s. *net.*

'Irresistible in their raciness, their variety, their animation . . . of extraordinary fascination. A delightful inheritance, the truest record of a "richly compounded spirit" that the literature of our time has preserved.'—*Times.*

LIMA LETTERS. With an Etched rtrait by WILLIAM STRANG. *Third dition. Crown 8vo. Buckram. 6s.*

E LIFE OF R. L. STEVENSON. See . Balfour.

). Stone, M.A., late Assistant Master at ton. SELECTIONS FROM THE DYSSEY. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d.*

rles Strachey. See Chesterfield.

W. Streane, D.D. ECCLESIASTES. xplained. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.* [Churchman's Bible.

'Scholarly, suggestive, and particularly nteresting.'—*Bookman.*

ment R. Stretton. A HISTORY OF THE MIDLAND RAILWAY. With numerous Illustrations. *Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

Stroud, D.Sc., M.A., Professor of Physics in the Durham College of Science, Newcastle-on-Tyne. PRACTICAL PHYSICS. Fully Illustrated. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.* [Textbooks of Technology.

Suddards. See C. Stephenson.

onathan Swift. THE JOURNAL TO STELLA. Edited by G. A. AITKEN. *Crown 8vo. 6s.* [Methuen's Standard Library.

. E. Symes, M.A. THE FRENCH REVOLUTION. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [University Extension Series.

Tacitus. AGRICOLA. With Introduction, Notes, Map, etc. By R. F. DAVIS, M.A., late Assistant Master at Weymouth College. *Crown 8vo. 2s.*

GERMANIA. By the same Editor. *Crown 8vo. 2s.*

AGRICOLA AND GERMANIA. Translated by R. B. TOWNSHEND, late Scholar of Trinity College, Cambridge. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [Classical Translations.

J. Tauler. THE INNER WAY. Being Thirty-six Sermons for Festivals by JOHN TAULER. Edited, with an Introduction. By A. W. HUTTON, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Library of Devotion.

E. L. Taunton. A HISTORY OF THE JESUITS IN ENGLAND. With Illustrations. *Demy 8vo. 21s. net.*

'A history of permanent value, which covers ground never properly investigated before, and is replete with the results of original research. A most interesting and careful book.'—*Literature.*

F. G. Taylor, M.A. COMMERCIAL ARITHMETIC. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo. 1s. 6d.* [Commercial Series.

T. M. Taylor, M.A., Fellow of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge. A CONSTITUTIONAL AND POLITICAL HISTORY OF ROME. *Crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.*

'We fully recognise the value of this carefully written work, and admire especially the fairness and sobriety of his judgment and the human interest with which he has inspired a subject which in some hands becomes a mere series of cold abstractions. It is a work that will be stimulating to the student of Roman history.'—*Athenæum.*

Alfred, Lord Tennyson. THE EARLY POEMS OF. Edited, with Notes and an Introduction, by J. CHURTON COLLINS, M.A. *Crown 8vo. 6s.* [Methuen's Standard Library.

Also with 10 Illustrations in Photogravure by W. E. F. BRITTEN. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

An elaborate edition of the celebrated volume which was published in its final and definitive form in 1853. This edition contains a long Introduction and copious Notes, textual and explanatory. It also contains in an Appendix all the Poems which Tennyson afterwards omitted.

MAUD. Edited by ELIZABETH WORDSWORTH. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

IN MEMORIAM. Edited, with an Introduction and Notes, by H. C. BEECHING, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

THE EARLY POEMS OF. Edited by J. C. COLLINS, M.A. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

THE PRINCESS. Edited by ELIZABETH WORDSWORTH. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

Alice Terton. LIGHTS AND SHADOWS IN A HOSPITAL. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

W. M. Thackeray. VANITY FAIR. With an Introduction by S. GWYNN. *Three Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each volume, cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

PENDENNIS. Edited by S. GWYNN. *Three Volumes. Pott 8vo. Each volume, cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.* [Little Library.

F. W. Theobald, M.A. INSECT LIFE. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.* [University Extension Series.

A. H. Thompson. CAMBRIDGE AND ITS COLLEGES. Illustrated by E. H. NEW. *Pott 8vo. Cloth, 3s.; leather, 3s. 6d. net.* [Little Guides.

'It is brightly written and learned, and is just such a book as a cultured visitor needs.'—*Scotsman.*

The Little Library

With Introductions, Notes, and Photogravure Frontispieces.

Pott 8vo. Each Volume, cloth, 1s. 6d. net; leather, 2s. 6d. net.

'Altogether good to look upon, and to handle.'—*Outlook.*
'A perfect series.'—*Pilot.*
'It is difficult to conceive more attractive volumes.'—*St. James's Gazette.*
'Very delicious little books.'—*Literature.*
'Delightful editions.'—*Record.*

VANITY FAIR. By W. M. Thackeray. Edited by S. Gwynn. *Three Volumes.*

PENDENNIS. By W. M. Thackeray. Edited by S. Gwynn. *Three Volumes.*

JOHN HALIFAX, GENTLEMAN. By Mrs. Craik. Edited by Annie Matheson. *Two Volumes.*

PRIDE AND PREJUDICE. By Jane Austen. Edited by E. V. Lucas. *Two Volumes.*

NORTHANGER ABBEY. By Jane Austen. Edited by E. V. Lucas.

THE PRINCESS. By Alfred, Lord Tennyson. Edited by Elizabeth Wordsworth.

MAUD. By Alfred, Lord Tennyson. Edited by Elizabeth Wordsworth.

IN MEMORIAM. By Alfred, Lord Tennyson. Edited by H. C. Beeching, M.A.

THE EARLY POEMS OF ALFRED, LORD TENNYSON. Edited by J. C. Collins, M.A.

A LITTLE BOOK OF ENGLISH LYRICS. With Notes.

THE INFERNO OF DANTE. Translated by H. F. Cary. Edited by Paget Toynbee, Litt.D., M.A.

THE PURGATORIO OF DANTE. Translated by H. F. Cary. Edited by Paget Toynbee, Litt.D., M.A.

THE PARADISO OF DANTE. Translated by H. F. Cary. Edited by Paget Toynbee, Litt.D., M.A.

A LITTLE BOOK OF SCOTTISH VERSE. Edited by T. F. Henderson.

A LITTLE BOOK OF LIGHT VERSE. Edited by A. C. Deane.

SELECTIONS FROM WORDSWORTH. Edited by Nowell C. Smith.

THE ENGLISH POEMS OF RICHARD CRASHAW. Edited by Edward Hutton.

SELECTIONS FROM WILLIAM BLAKE. Edited by M. Perugini.

EOTHEN. By A. W. Kinglake. With an Introduction and Notes.

CRANFORD. By Mrs. Gaskell. Edited by E. V. Lucas.

A LITTLE BOOK OF ENGLISH PROSE. Edited by Mrs. P. A. Barnett.

LAVENGRO. By George Borrow. Edited by F. Hindes Groome. *Two Volumes.*

THE HISTORY OF THE CALIPH VATHEK. By William Beckford. Edited by E. Denison Ross.

THE COMPLEAT ANGLER. By Izaak Walton. Edited by J. Buchan.

MARRIAGE. By Susan Ferrier. Edited by Miss Goodrich-Freer and Lord Iddesleigh. *Two Volumes.*

SELECTIONS FROM THE EARLY POEMS OF ROBERT BROWNING. Edited by W. Hall Griffin, M.A.

ELIA, AND THE LAST ESSAYS OF ELIA. By Charles Lamb. Edited by E. V. Lucas.

A SENTIMENTAL JOURNEY. By Laurence Sterne. Edited by H. W. Paul.

A LITTLE BOOK OF LIFE AND DEATH. Edited by Mrs. Alfred Waterhouse.

MANSIE WAUCH. By D. M. Moir. Edited by T. F. Henderson.

The Little Guides

Pott 8vo, cloth, 3s.; leather, 3s. 6d. net.

OXFORD AND ITS COLLEGES. By J. Wells, M.A. Illustrated by E. H. New. *Fourth Edition.*

CAMBRIDGE AND ITS COLLEGES. By A. Hamilton Thompson. Illustrated by E. H. New.

THE MALVERN COUNTRY. By B. C. A. Windle, D.Sc., F.R.S. Illustrated by E. H. New.

SHAKESPEARE'S COUNTRY. By B. C. A. Windle, D.Sc., F.R.S. Illustrated by E. H. New. *Second Edition.*

SUSSEX. By F. G. Brabant, M.A. Illustrated by E. H. New.

WESTMINSTER ABBEY. By G. E. Troutbeck. Illustrated by F. D. Bedford.

NORFOLK. By W. A. Dutt. Illustrated by B. C. Boulter.

Little Biographies

Fcap. 8vo. Each volume, cloth, 3s. 6d.; leather, 4s. net.

THE LIFE OF DANTE ALIGHIERI. By Paget Toynbee, Litt.D., M.A. With 12 Illustrations. *Second Edition.*

THE LIFE OF SAVONAROLA. By E. L. S. Horsburgh, M.A. With Portraits and Illustrations.

THE LIFE OF JOHN HOWARD. By E. C. S. Gibson, D.D., Vicar of Leeds. With 12 Illustrations.

THE LIFE OF LORD TENNYSON. By A. C. Benson, M.A. With 12 Illustrations.

The Little Blue Books for Children

Edited by E. V. LUCAS.

Illustrated. Square Fcap. 8vo. 2s. 6d.

'Very elegant and very interesting volumes.'—*Glasgow Herald.*
'A delightful series of diminutive volumes.'—*World.*
'The series should be a favourite among juveniles.'—*Observer.*

HE CASTAWAYS OF MEADOWBANK. By T. COBB.
HE BEECHNUT BOOK. By JACOB ABBOTT. Edited by E. V. LUCAS.
HE AIR GUN. By T. HILBERT.

The Library of Devotion

With Introductions and (where necessary) Notes.

Pott 8vo, cloth, 2s.; leather, 2s. 6d. net.

'This series is excellent.'—THE LATE BISHOP OF LONDON.
'Well worth the attention of the Clergy.'—THE BISHOP OF LICHFIELD.
'The new "Library of Devotion" is excellent.'—THE BISHOP OF PETERBOROUGH.
'Charming.'—*Record.* 'Delightful.'—*Church Bells.*

HE CONFESSIONS OF ST. AUGUSTINE. Edited by C. Bigg, D.D. *Third Edition.*

HE CHRISTIAN YEAR. Edited by Walter Lock, D.D. *Second Edition.*

HE IMITATION OF CHRIST. Edited by C. Bigg, D.D. *Second Edition.*

BOOK OF DEVOTIONS. Edited by J. W. Stanbridge, B.D.

LYRA INNOCENTIUM. Edited by Walter Lock, D.D.

A SERIOUS CALL TO A DEVOUT AND HOLY LIFE. Edited by C. Bigg, D.D. *Second Edition.*

THE TEMPLE. Edited by E. C. S. Gibson, D.D.

A GUIDE TO ETERNITY. Edited by J. W. Stanbridge, B.D.

THE PSALMS OF DAVID. Edited by B. W. Randolph, D.D.

LYRA APOSTOLICA. Edited by Canon Scott Holland and H. C. Beeching, M.A.

THE INNER WAY. Edited by A. W. Hutton, M.A.

THE THOUGHTS OF PASCAL. Edited by C. S. Jerram, M.A.

ON THE LOVE OF GOD. Edited by W. J. Knox-Little, M.A.

A MANUAL OF CONSOLATION FROM THE SAINTS AND FATHERS. Edited by J. H. Burn, B.D.

THE SONG OF SONGS. Edited by B. Blaxland, M.A.

THE DEVOTIONS OF ST. ANSELM. Edited by C. C. J. Webb, M.A.

Oxford Commentaries

General Editor, WALTER LOCK, D.D., Warden of Keble College, Dean Ireland's Professor of Exegesis in the University of Oxford.

THE BOOK OF JOB. Edited by E. C. S. Gibson, D.D. *Demy 8vo. 6s.*

THE ACTS OF THE APOSTLES. Edited by R. B. Rackman, M.A. *Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

Handbooks of Theology

General Editor, A. ROBERTSON, D.D., Principal of King's College, London.

THE XXXIX. ARTICLES OF THE CHURCH OF ENGLAND. Edited by E. C. S. Gibson, D.D. *Third and Cheaper Edition in One Volume. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE HISTORY OF RELIGION. By F. B. Jevons, M.A., Litt.D. *Second Edition. Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

THE DOCTRINE OF THE INCARNATION. By R. L. Ottley, M.A. *Second and Cheaper Edition. Demy 8vo. 12s. 6d.*

AN INTRODUCTION TO THE HISTORY OF THE CREEDS. By A. E. Burn, B.D. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

THE PHILOSOPHY OF RELIGION IN ENGLAND AND AMERICA. By Alfred Caldecott, D.D. *Demy 8vo. 10s. 6d.*

The Churchman's Library

General Editor, J. H. BURN, B.D., F.R.S.E., Examining Chaplain to the Bishop of Aberdeen.

THE BEGINNINGS OF ENGLISH CHRISTIANITY. By W. E. Collins, M.A. With Map. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

SOME NEW TESTAMENT PROBLEMS. By Arthur Wright, M.A. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN HERE AND HEREAFTER. By Canon Winterbotham, M.A., B.Sc., LL.B. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

THE WORKMANSHIP OF THE PRAYER BOOK: Its Literary and Liturgical Aspects. By J. Dowden, D.D. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

EVOLUTION. By F. B. Jevons, M.A., Litt.D *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

THE OLD TESTAMENT AND THE NEW SCHOLARSHIP. By J. P. Peters, D.D. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

THE CHURCHMAN'S INTRODUCTION TO THE OLD TESTAMENT. Edited by A. M. Mackay, B.A. *Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.*

THE CHURCH OF CHRIST. By E. T. Green, M.A. *Crown 8vo. 6s.*

The Churchman's Bible

General Editor, J. H. BURN, B.D.

Messrs. METHUEN are issuing a series of expositions upon most of the books of the Bible. The volumes are practical and devotional, and the text of the Authorised Version is explained in sections, which correspond as far as possible with the Church Lectionary.

THE EPISTLE TO THE GALATIANS. Explained by A. W. Robinson. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.*

ECCLESIASTES. Explained by A. W. Streane, D.D. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.*

THE EPISTLE TO THE PHILIPPIANS. Explained by C. R. D. Biggs, D.D. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.*

THE EPISTLE OF ST. JAMES. Edited by E. Fullerd, M.A. *Fcap. 8vo. 1s. 6d. net.*

ISAIAH. Edited by W. E. Barnes, D.D. *Volumes. 2s. net each.* Vol. I. With Map.

THE EPISTLE OF ST. PAUL THE APOSTLE TO THE EPHESIANS. Edited by G. H. Whitaker, M.A. *1s. 6d. net.*

Leaders of Religion

Edited by H. C. BEECHING, M.A. *With Portraits. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

A series of short biographies of the most prominent leaders of religious life and thought of all ages and countries.

The following are ready:—

CARDINAL NEWMAN. By R. H. Hutton.

JOHN WESLEY. By J. H. Overton, M.A.

BISHOP WILBERFORCE. By G. W. Daniell, M.A.

CARDINAL MANNING. By A. W. Hutton, M.A.

CHARLES SIMEON. By H. C. G. Moule, D.D.

JOHN KEBLE. By Walter Lock, D.D.

THOMAS CHALMERS. By Mrs. Oliphant.

LANCELOT ANDREWES. By R. L. Ottley, M.A.

AUGUSTINE OF CANTERBURY. By E. L. Cutts, D.D.

WILLIAM LAUD. By W. H. Hutton, M.A.

JOHN KNOX. By F. MacCunn.

JOHN HOWE. By R. F. Horton, D.D.

BISHOP KEN. By F. A. Clarke, M.A.

GEORGE FOX, THE QUAKER. By T. Hodgkin, D.C.L.

JOHN DONNE. By Augustus Jessopp, D.D.

THOMAS CRANMER. By A. J. Mason.

BISHOP LATIMER. By R. M. Carlyle and A. J. Carlyle, M.A.

BISHOP BUTLER. By W. A. Spooner, M.A.

Other volumes will be announced in due course.

Social Questions of To-day

Edited by H. DE B. GIBBINS, Litt.D., M.A.

Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d.

TRADE UNIONISM—NEW AND OLD. By G. Howell. *Third Edition.*

THE CO-OPERATIVE MOVEMENT TO-DAY. By G. J. Holyoake. *Second Edition.*

MUTUAL THRIFT. By Rev. J. Frome Wilkinson, M.A.

PROBLEMS OF POVERTY. By J. A. Hobson, M.A. *Fourth Edition.*

THE COMMERCE OF NATIONS. By C. F. Bastable, M.A. *Second Edition.*

THE ALIEN INVASION. By W. H. Wilkins, B.A.

THE RURAL EXODUS. By P. Anderson Graham.

LAND NATIONALIZATION. By Harold Cox, B.A.

A SHORTER WORKING DAY. By H. de B. Gibbins and R. A. Hadfield.

BACK TO THE LAND: An Inquiry into Rural Depopulation. By H. E. Moore.

TRUSTS, POOLS, AND CORNERS. By J. Stephen Jeans.

THE FACTORY SYSTEM. By R. W. Cooke-Taylor.

THE STATE AND ITS CHILDREN. By Gertrude Tuckwell.

WOMEN'S WORK. By Lady Dilke, Miss Bulley, and Miss Whitley.

SOCIALISM AND MODERN THOUGHT. By M. Kauffmann.

THE HOUSING OF THE WORKING CLASSES. By E. Bowmaker.

THE PROBLEM OF THE UNEMPLOYED. By J. A. Hobson, B.A.

LIFE IN WEST LONDON. By Arthur Sherwell, M.A. *Third Edition.*

RAILWAY NATIONALIZATION. By Clement Edwards.

WORKHOUSES AND PAUPERISM. By Louisa Twining.

UNIVERSITY AND SOCIAL SETTLEMENTS. By W. Reason, M.A.

University Extension Series

Edited by J. E. SYMES, M.A.,
Principal of University College, Nottingham.
Crown 8vo. Price (with some exceptions) 2s. 6d.

A series of books on historical, literary, and scientific subjects, suitable for ension students and home-reading circles. Each volume is complete in elf, and the subjects are treated by competent writers in a broad and philo-phic spirit.

The following Volumes are ready:—

IE INDUSTRIAL HISTORY OF ENGLAND. By H. de B. Gibbins, Litt.D., M.A. *Eighth Edition.* Revised. With Maps and Plans. 3s.

HISTORY OF ENGLISH POLITICAL ECONOMY. By L. L. Price, M.A. *Third Edition.*

ROBLEMS OF POVERTY. By J. A. Hobson, M.A. *Fourth Edition.*

ICTORIAN POETS. By A. Sharp.

HE FRENCH REVOLUTION. By J. E. Symes, M.A.

SYCHOLOGY. By S. F. Granger, M.A. *Second Edition.*

HE EVOLUTION OF PLANT LIFE; Lower Forms. By G. Massee. Illustrated.

AIR AND WATER. By V. B. Lewes, M.A. Illustrated.

THE CHEMISTRY OF LIFE AND HEALTH. By C. W. Kimmins, M.A. Illustrated.

THE MECHANICS OF DAILY LIFE. By V. P. Sells, M.A. Illustrated.

ENGLISH SOCIAL REFORMERS. By H. de B. Gibbins, Litt.D., M.A. *Second Edition.*

ENGLISH TRADE AND FINANCE IN THE SEVENTEENTH CENTURY. By W. A. S. Hewins, B.A.

THE CHEMISTRY OF FIRE. By M. M. Pattison Muir, M.A. Illustrated.

A TEXT-BOOK OF AGRICULTURAL BOTANY. By M. C. Potter, M.A., F.L.S. Illustrated. *Second Edition.* 4s. 6d.

THE VAULT OF HEAVEN. A Popular Introduction to Astronomy. By R. A. Gregory. With numerous Illustrations.

METEOROLOGY. By H. N. Dickson, F.R.S.E., F.R. Met. Soc. Illustrated.

A MANUAL OF ELECTRICAL SCIENCE. By George J. Burch, M.A., F.R.S. Illustrated. 3s.

THE EARTH. An Introduction to Physiography. By Evan Small, M.A. Illustrated.

INSECT LIFE. By F. W. Theobald, M.A. Illustrated.

ENGLISH POETRY FROM BLAKE TO BROWNING. By W. M. Dixon, M.A. *Second Edition.*

ENGLISH LOCAL GOVERNMENT. By E. Jenks, M.A.

THE GREEK VIEW OF LIFE. By G. L. Dickinson. *Second Edition.*

Commercial Series

Edited by H. DE B. GIBBINS, Litt.D., M.A.

COMMERCIAL EDUCATION IN THEORY AND PRACTICE. By E. E. Whitfield, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 5s.

An introduction to Methuen's Commercial Series treating the question of Commercial Education fully from both the point of view of the teacher and of the parent.

BRITISH COMMERCE AND COLONIES FROM ELIZABETH TO VICTORIA. By H. de B. Gibbins, Litt.D., M.A. *Third Edition.* 2s.

COMMERCIAL EXAMINATION PAPERS. By H. de B. Gibbins, Litt.D., M.A. 1s. 6d.

THE ECONOMICS OF COMMERCE. By H. de B. Gibbins, Litt.D., M.A. 1s. 6d.

A GERMAN COMMERCIAL READER. By S. E. Bally. With Vocabulary. 2s.

A COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF THE BRITISH EMPIRE. By L. W. Lyde, M.A. *Third Edition.* 2s.

A PRIMER OF BUSINESS. By S. Jackson, M.A. *Third Edition.* 1s. 6d.

COMMERCIAL ARITHMETIC. By F. G. Taylor, M.A. *Third Edition.* 1s. 6d.

FRENCH COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE. By S. E. Bally. With Vocabulary. *Third Edition.* 2s.

GERMAN COMMERCIAL CORRESPONDENCE. By S. E. Bally. With Vocabulary. 2s. 6d.

A FRENCH COMMERCIAL READER. By S. E. Bally. With Vocabulary. *Second Edition.* 2s.

PRECIS WRITING AND OFFICE CORRESPONDENCE. By E. E. Whitfield, M.A. 2s.

A GUIDE TO PROFESSIONS AND BUSINESS. By H. Jones. 1s. 6d.

THE PRINCIPLES OF BOOK-KEEPING BY DOUBLE ENTRY. By J. E. B. M'Allen, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

COMMERCIAL LAW. By W. Douglas Edwards. 2s.

A COMMERCIAL GEOGRAPHY OF FOREIGN NATIONS. By F. C. Boon, B.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

Classical Translations

Edited by H. F. FOX, M.A., Fellow and Tutor of Brasenose College, Oxford.

ÆSCHYLUS—Agamemnon, Choephoroe, Eumenides. Translated by Lewis Campbell, LL.D. 5s.

CICERO—De Oratore I. Translated by E. N. P. Moor, M.A. 3s. 6d.

CICERO—Select Orations (Pro Milone, Pro Murena, Philippic II., in Catilinam). Translated by H. E. D. Blakiston, M.A. 5s.

CICERO—De Natura Deorum. Translated by F. Brooks, M.A. 3s. 6d.

CICERO—De Officiis. Translated by G. B. Gardiner, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

HORACE—The Odes and Epodes. Translated by A. Godley, M.A. 2s.

LUCIAN—Six Dialogues (Nigrinus, Icaro-Menippus, The Cock, The Ship, The Parasite, The Lover of Falsehood). Translated by S. T. Irwin, M.A. 3s. 6d.

SOPHOCLES—Electra and Ajax. Translated by E. D. A. Morshead, M.A. 2s. 6d.

TACITUS—Agricola and Germania. Translated by R. B. Townshend. 2s. 6d.

Methuen's Junior School-Books.

Edited by O. D. INSKIP, LL.D., and W. WILLIAMSON, B.A.

A CLASS-BOOK OF DICTATION PASSAGES. By W. Williamson, B.A. *Sixth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

THE GOSPEL ACCORDING TO ST. MARK. Edited by A. E. Rubie, M.A., Headmaster of the Royal Naval School, Eltham. With Three Maps. *Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

A JUNIOR ENGLISH GRAMMAR. By W. Williamson, B.A. With numerous passages for parsing and analysis, and a chapter on Essay Writing. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

A JUNIOR CHEMISTRY. By E. A. Tyler, B.A., F.C.S., Science Master at Framlingham College. With 73 Illustrations. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

School Examination Series

Edited by A. M. M. STEDMAN, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 2s. 6d.

FRENCH EXAMINATION PAPERS. By A. M. M. Stedman, M.A. *Eleventh Edition.*
A KEY, issued to Tutors and Private Students only, to be had on application to the Publishers. *Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s. *net.*

LATIN EXAMINATION PAPERS. By A. M. M. Stedman, M.A. *Eleventh Edition.*
KEY (*Fourth Edition*) issued as above. 6s. *net.*

GREEK EXAMINATION PAPERS. By A. M. M. Stedman, M.A. *Sixth Edition.*
KEY (*Second Edition*) issued as above. 6s. *net.*

GERMAN EXAMINATION PAPERS. By R. J. Morich. *Fifth Edition.*
KEY (*Second Edition*) issued as above. 6s. *net.*

HISTORY AND GEOGRAPHY EXAMINATION PAPERS. By C. H. Spence, M.A., Clifton College. *Second Edition.*

PHYSICS EXAMINATION PAPERS. By R. E. Steel, M.A., F.C.S.

GENERAL KNOWLEDGE EXAMINATION PAPERS. By A. M. M. Stedman, M.A. *Fourth Edition.*
KEY (*Second Edition*) issued as above. 3s. *net.*

EXAMINATION PAPERS IN ENGLISH HISTORY. By J. Tait Plowden-Wardlaw, B.A. *Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

Technology—Textbooks of

Edited by W. GARNETT, D.C.L., and PROFESSOR J. WERTHEIMER, F.I.C.

Fully Illustrated.

HOW TO MAKE A DRESS. By J. A. E. Wood. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1s. 6d.

CARPENTRY AND JOINERY. By F. C. Webber. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

PRACTICAL MECHANICS. By Sidney H. Wells. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

PRACTICAL PHYSICS. By H. Stroud, D.Sc., M.A. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

MILLINERY, THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL. By Clare Hill. *Crown 8vo.* 2s.

PRACTICAL CHEMISTRY. By W. French, M.A. *Crown 8vo.* Part I. 1s. 6d.

PART II.—FICTION

Marie Corelli's Novels.

Crown 8vo. 6s. *each.*

A ROMANCE OF TWO WORLDS. *Twenty-Third Edition.*

VENDETTA. *Eighteenth Edition.*

THELMA. *Twenty-Seventh Edition.*

ARDATH: THE STORY OF A DEAD SELF. *Thirteenth Edition.*

THE SOUL OF LILITH. *Eleventh Edit.*

WORMWOOD. *Twelfth Edition.*

BARABBAS: A DREAM OF THE WORLD'S TRAGEDY. *Thirty-Seventh Edition.*

'The tender reverence of the treatment and the imaginative beauty of the writing have reconciled us to the daring of the conception. This "Dream of the World's Tragedy" is a lofty and not inadequate paraphrase of the supreme climax of the inspired narrative.'—*Dublin Review.*

THE SORROWS OF SATAN. *Forty-Fifth Edition.*

'A very powerful piece of work. . . . The conception is magnificent, and is likely to win an abiding place within the memory of man. . . . The author has immense command of language, and a limitless audacity. . . . This interesting and remarkable romance will live long after much of the ephemeral literature of the day is forgotten. . . . A literary phenomenon . . . novel, and even sublime.—W. T. STEAD in the *Review of Reviews.*

THE MASTER CHRISTIAN.

[*160th Thousand.*

'It cannot be denied that "The Master Christian" is a powerful book; that it is one likely to raise uncomfortable questions in all but the most self-satisfied readers, and that it strikes at the root of the failure of the Churches—the decay of faith—in a manner which shows the inevitable disaster heaping up. . . . The good Cardinal Bonpré is a beautiful figure, fit to stand beside the good Bishop in "Les Misérables." It is a book with a serious purpose expressed with absolute unconventionality and passion . . . And this is to say it is a book worth reading.'—*Examiner.*

Anthony Hope's Novels.

Crown 8vo. 6*s. each.*

; GOD IN THE CAR. *Ninth Edition.*

A very remarkable book, deserving of tical analysis impossible within our limit; illiant, but not superficial; well con- lered, but not elaborated; constructed ith the proverbial art that conceals, but t allows itself to be enjoyed by readers whom fine literary method is a keen easure.'—*The World.*

HANGE OF AIR. *Sixth Edition.*

'A graceful, vivacious comedy, true to uman nature. The characters are traced ith a masterly hand.'—*Times.*

IAN OF MARK. *Fifth Edition.*

'Of all Mr. Hope's books, "A Man of Mark" is the one which best compares with 'The Prisoner of Zenda."'—*National Observer.*

IE CHRONICLES OF COUNT ANTONIO. *Fourth Edition.*

'It is a perfectly enchanting story of love and chivalry, and pure romance. The Count is the most constant, desperate, and modest and tender of lovers, a peerless gentleman, an intrepid fighter, a faithful friend, and a magnanimous foe.'—*Guardian.*

PHROSO. Illustrated by H. R. MILLAR. *Sixth Edition.*

'The tale is thoroughly fresh, quick with vitality, stirring the blood.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

SIMON DALE. Illustrated. *Sixth Edition.*

'There is searching analysis of human nature, with a most ingeniously constructed plot. Mr. Hope has drawn the contrasts of his women with marvellous subtlety and delicacy.'—*Times.*

THE KING'S MIRROR. *Third Edition.*

'In elegance, delicacy, and tact it ranks with the best of his novels, while in the wide range of its portraiture and the subtlety of its analysis it surpasses all his earlier ventures.'—*Spectator.*

QUISANTE. *Third Edition.*

'The book is notable for a very high literary quality, and an impress of power and mastery on every page.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

Lucas Malet's Novels.

Crown 8vo. 6*s. each.*

OLONEL ENDERBY'S WIFE. *Third Edition.*

COUNSEL OF PERFECTION. *New Edition.*

ITTLE PETER. *Second Edition.* 3*s.* 6*d.*

HE WAGES OF SIN. *Thirteenth Edition.*

HE CARISSIMA. *Fourth Edition.*

HE GATELESS BARRIER. *Fourth Edition.*

'In "The Gateless Barrier" it is at once evident that, whilst Lucas Malet has preserved her birthright of originality, the artistry, the actual writing, is above even the high level of the books that were born before.'—*Westminster Gazette.*

THE HISTORY OF SIR RICHARD CALMADY. *Seventh Edition.* A Limited Edition in Two Volumes. *Crown 8vo.* 12*s.*

'A picture finely and amply conceived. In the strength and insight in which the story has been conceived, in the wealth of fancy and reflection bestowed upon its execution, and in the moving sincerity of its pathos throughout, "Sir Richard Calmady" must rank as the great novel of a great writer.'—*Literature.*

'The ripest fruit of Lucas Malet's genius. A picture of maternal love by turns tender and terrible.'—*Spectator.*

'A remarkably fine book, with a noble motive and a sound conclusion.'—*Pilot.*

W. W. Jacobs' Novels.

Crown 8vo. 3*s.* 6*d. each.*

MANY CARGOES. *Twenty-Sixth Edition.*

SEA URCHINS. *Ninth Edition.*

A MASTER OF CRAFT. Illustrated. *Fifth Edition.*

Can be unreservedly recommended to all who have not lost their appetite for wholesome laughter.'—*Spectator.*

'The best humorous book published for many a day.'—*Black and White.*

LIGHT FREIGHTS. Illustrated. *Third Edition.*

'His wit and humour are perfectly irresistible. Mr. Jacobs writes of skippers, and mates, and seamen, and his crew are the jolliest lot that ever sailed.'—*Daily News.*

'Laughter in every page.'—*Daily Mail.*

C. K. Denny. THE ROMANCE OF UPFOLD MANOR. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A fine tragic story.'—*Weekly Register.*

'There is picturesqueness and real feeling.'—*St. James's Gazette.*

A. Conan Doyle, Author of 'Sherlock Holmes,' 'The White Company,' etc. ROUND THE RED LAMP. *Eighth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'The book is far and away the best view that has been vouchsafed us behind the scenes of the consulting-room.'—*Illustrated London News.*

Sara Jeannette Duncan (Mrs. Everard Cotes), Author of 'A Voyage of Consolation.' THOSE DELIGHTFUL AMERICANS. Illustrated. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A rattling picture of American life, bright and good-tempered throughout.'—*Scotsman.*

'The humour is delicious.'—*Daily Mail.*

G. F. Embree. A HEART OF FLAME. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Alive with the pulsing and clamorous life of the wild folk and wild actions with which it deals. A striking, well-conceived piece of work.'—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

'An admirable story, well told. The characters are full of life, and Ramoncita is really a delicious little creature.'—*Morning Post.*

'The figure of Ramoncita, the heroine, a Mexican girl of 15, is charming—a sketch romantic and delicately drawn.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

J. H. Findlater. THE GREEN GRAVES OF BALGOWRIE. *Fourth Edition Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A powerful and vivid story.'—*Standard.*

'A beautiful story, sad and strange as truth itself.'—*Vanity Fair.*

'A singularly original, clever, and beautiful story.'—*Guardian.*

'Reveals to us a new writer of undoubted faculty and reserve force.'—*Spectator.*

'An exquisite idyll, delicate, affecting, and beautiful.—*Black and White.*

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

Mary Findlater. A NARROW WAY. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

OVER THE HILLS *Second Edition Crown 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

Tom Gallon, Author of 'Kiddy.' RICKERBY'S FOLLY. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Dorothea Gerard, Author of 'Lady Baby.' THE MILLION. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE CONQUEST OF LONDON. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE SUPREME CRIME. *Cr. 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

Algernon Gissing. THE KEYS OF THE HOUSE. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A story of absorbing interest.'—*Liverpool Mercury.*

'The book is carefully built up, piece by piece. The figure of Brant himself moving among his people in his lonely parish of the hills is one that long remains with the reader.'—*Daily Telegraph.*

George Gissing, Author of 'Demos,' 'In the Year of Jubilee,' etc. THE TOWN TRAVELLER. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

Ernest Glanville. THE KLOOF BRIDE. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

THE LOST REGIMENT. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

THE DESPATCH RIDER. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

Lord Ernest Hamilton. MARY HAMILTON. *Third Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'There can be no doubt that we have in "Mary Hamilton" a most fascinating story—the most stirring and dramatic historical romance that has come in our way for a long time.'—*Illustrated London News.*

Robert Hichens, Author of 'Flames,' etc. THE PROPHET OF BERKELEY SQUARE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'One continuous sparkle. Mr. Hichens is witty, satirical, caustic, irresistibly humorous.'—*Birmingham Gazette.*

TONGUES OF CONSCIENCE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

John Oliver Hobbes, Author of 'Robert Orange.' THE SERIOUS WOOING. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Mrs. Craigie is as brilliant as she ever has been; her characters are all illuminated with sparkling gems of description, and the conversation scintillates with an almost bewildering blaze.'—*Athenæum.*

Anthony Hope. See page 33.

Violet Hunt. THE HUMAN INTEREST. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

C. J. Cutcliffe Hyne, Author of 'Captain Kettle.' PRINCE RUPERT THE BUCCANEER. With 8 Illustrations. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

MR. HORROCKS, PURSER. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Mr. Horrocks is a good second to the unapproachable Captain Kettle.'—*Academy.*

'Mr. Horrocks is sublime.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

'The Purser is a diverting discovery, and his adventures are related with vigour.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

W. W. Jacobs. See page 33.

nry James. Author of 'What Maisie Knew.' THE SACRED FOUNT. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE SOFT SIDE. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

. F. Keary. THE JOURNALIST. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

lorence Finch Kelly. WITH HOOPS OF STEEL. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Every chapter is filled with exciting incidents.'—*Morning Leader.*

'A daring and brilliant story of adventure. The novel teems with life and character, with life which is always within an ace of death, and character which curiously blends the ruffian and the hero.'—*Scotsman.*

Hon. Emily Lawless. TRAITS AND CONFIDENCES. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

E. Lynn Linton. THE TRUE HISTORY OF JOSHUA DAVIDSON, Christian and Communist. *Eleventh Edition. Crown 8vo.* 1s.

Charles K. Lush. THE AUTOCRATS. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A clever story of American life. Its atmosphere is convincing and striking.'—*Vanity Fair.*

'Eminently readable with clever photographs of American social life.'—*Standard.*

S. Macnaughtan. THE FORTUNE OF CHRISTINA NACNAB. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

A. Macdonell. THE STORY OF TERESA. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Varied and clever characterisation and close sympathy with humanity.'—*Westminster Gazette.*

'The book is bracing as the moor itself. It has a threefold interest—its keen characterisation, its psychological insight, and its philosophy of life.'—*Pilot.*

Lucas Malet. See page 33.

Richard Marsh. Author of 'The Seen and the Unseen.' BOTH SIDES OF THE VEIL. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Here we have Mr. Marsh at his best.'—*Globe.* See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

A. E. W. Mason. Author of 'The Courtship of Morrice Buckler,' 'Miranda of the Balcony,' etc. CLEMENTINA. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A romance of the most delicate ingenuity and humour . . . the very quintessence of romance.'—*Spectator.*

L. T. Meade. DRIFT. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Well told, and full of incident and character.'—*World.*

'A powerfully-wrought story.'—*Birmingham Post.*

'A powerful story, which treats of the drifting of a man of high intellectual gifts.'—*Court Circular.*

Bertram Mitford. THE SIGN OF THE SPIDER. *Fifth Edition.*

F. F. Montresor. Author of 'Into the Highways and Hedges.' THE ALIEN. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Fresh, unconventional, and instinct with human sympathy.'—*Manchester Guardian.*

'Miss Montresor creates her tragedy out of passions and necessities elementarily human. Perfect art.'—*Spectator.*

Arthur Morrison. See page 34.

W. E. Norris. THE EMBARRASSING ORPHAN. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

See also Fleur de Lis Novels.

Alfred Ollivant. OWD BOB, THE GREY DOG OF KENMUIR. *Fifth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Weird, thrilling, strikingly graphic.'—*Punch.*

'We admire this book . . . It is one to read with admiration and to praise with enthusiasm.'—*Bookman.*

'It is a fine, open-air, blood-stirring book, to be enjoyed by every man and woman to whom a dog is dear.'—*Literature.*

E. Phillips Oppenheim. MASTER OF MEN. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Gilbert Parker. See page 34.

James Blythe Patton. BIJLI, THE DANCER. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Max Pemberton. THE FOOTSTEPS OF A THRONE. Illustrated. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A story of pure adventure, with a sensation on every page.'—*Daily Mail.*

I CROWN THEE KING. With Illustrations by Frank Dadd and A. Forrestier. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A romance of high adventure, of love and war. It is a story of true love, of indomitable will, and of steadfastness that nothing can withstand.'—*Daily News.*

'A stirring tale.'—*Outlook.*

Eden Phillpotts. See page 34.

Walter Raymond. Author of 'Love and Quiet Life.' FORTUNE'S DARLING. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Edith Rickert. OUT OF THE CYPRESS SWAMP. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A tale in which a note of freshness and individuality is struck, and the delicate question of colour is handled with originality and power. It has fine thrilling moments.'—*Spectator.*

'The whole story is admirably told. Not even in "Uncle Tom's Cabin" is there anything more exciting than the bloodhound chase after the hero.'—*Tatler.*

W. Pett Ridge. LOST PROPERTY. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'The story is an interesting and animated

picture of the struggle for life in London, with a natural humour and tenderness of its own.'—*Scotsman.*

'A simple, delicate bit of work, which will give pleasure to many. Much study of the masses has made him, not mad, but strong, and—wonder of wonders—cheerful.' —*Times.*

'A really delightful life history of a London foundling. Once more we have to thank Mr. Pett Ridge for an admirable study of London life.'—*Spectator.*

Mrs. M. E. Roberton. A GALLANT QUAKER. Illustrated. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'It is a strong story of love and hate, of religious excitement and calm faith.'—*Leeds Mercury.*

W. Clark Russell. MY DANISH SWEETHEART. Illustrated. *Fourth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Grace Rhys. THE WOOING OF SHEILA. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A really fine book. A book that deserves to live. Sheila is the sweetest heroine who has lived in a novelist's pages for many a day. Every scene and every incident has the impress of truth. It is a masterly romance, and one that should be widely read and appreciated.'—*Morning Leader.*

W. Satchell. THE LAND OF THE LOST. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'An exciting story . . . the plot and passion are managed with skill, and the author shows himself a master of the art of depicting human character.'

—*Glasgow Herald.*

Adeline Sergeant. Author of 'The Story of a Penitent Soul.' A GREAT LADY. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE MASTER OF BEECHWOOD. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'A pleasant and excellently told story, 'natural and fresh.'—*Glasgow Herald.*

'A wholesome novel, with plenty of incident.'—*Spectator.*

W. F. Shannon. THE MESS DECK. *Crown 8vo.* 3s. 6d.

Helen Shipton. THE STRONG GOD CIRCUMSTANCE. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Annie Swan. LOVE GROWN COLD. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 5s.

'One of the strongest books that the author has yet given us. We feel that the characters are taken from life. The story is told with delicacy and restraint.'—*Daily News.*

Benjamin Swift, Author of 'Siren City.' SORDON. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Handled with a skill and a power that are almost unfailing. The book is thoroughly good. It absorbs as much by its ingenuity in the use of material as by the force of its imagination.'—*Academy.*

'The author tells his story with great dramatic intentness, with simplicity, and strength.'—*Daily News.*

'A remarkable, venturesome, painful, and interesting book. The story is beautifully told; it is rare pleasure to read such writing, so simple, finely balanced, graceful, refined, yet forcible.'—*World.*

Paul Waineman. A HEROINE FROM FINLAND. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Fresh in subject and treatment.'

—*Academy.*

'An idyll of country life which has the charm of entire novelty and freshness.'—*Morning Leader.*

'This tale of Russian and Finnish life is a most readable and enthralling one. The story is simple yet strong, and reveals intimate knowledge of Finnish life and manners.'—*Scotsman.*

'A delightful story.'—*Daily Express.*

'This lovely tale.'

—*Manchester Guardian.*

'A vivid picture of pastoral life in a beautiful and too little known country.'

—*Pall Mall Gazette.*

R. B. Townshend. LONE PINE: A Romance of Mexican Life. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

H. B. Marriott Watson. THE SKIRTS OF HAPPY CHANCE. Illustrated. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Mr. Watson's light touch, his genuine sense of humour, his ingenuity, and, above all, his polished and clear-cut style will provide genuine entertainment.'—*Pilot.*

H. G. Wells. THE STOLEN BACILLUS, and other Stories. *Second Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

THE PLATTNER STORY AND OTHERS. *Second Edition Crown 8vo.* 6s.

Stanley Weyman, Author of 'A Gentleman of France.' UNDER THE RED ROBE. With Illustrations by R. C. WOODVILLE. *Seventeenth Edition. Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'Every one who reads books at all must read this thrilling romance, from the first page of which to the last the breathless reader is haled along. An inspiration of manliness and courage.'—*Daily Chronicle.*

Zack, Author of 'Life is Life.' TALES OF DUNSTABLE WEIR. *Crown 8vo.* 6s.

'"Zack" draws her pictures with great detail; they are indeed Dutch interiors in their fidelity to the small things of life.'—*Westminster Gazette.*

The Fleur de Lis Novels

Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

MESSRS. METHUEN are now publishing popular Novels in a new and most rming style of binding. Ultimately, this Series will contain the following ks:—

Andrew Balfour.
ARMS!
GRANGE IS MINE.

M. C. Balfour.
FALL OF THE SPARROW.

Jane Barlow.
LAND OF THE SHAMROCK.
REEL OF IRISH STORIES.
M THE EAST UNTO THE WEST.

J. A. Barry.
THE GREAT DEEP.

E. F. Benson.
E CAPSINA.
DO: A DETAIL OF THE DAY.
E VINTAGE.

J. Bloundelle-Burton.
THE DAY OF ADVERSITY.
NOUNCED.
E CLASH OF ARMS.
ROSS THE SALT SEAS.
RVANTS OF SIN.

Mrs. Caffyn (Iota).
INE MAULEVERER.

Ada Cambridge.
TH AND GOAL.

Mrs. W. K. Clifford.
WOMAN ALONE.
FLASH OF SUMMER.

J. Maclaren Cobban.
HE ANGEL OF THE COVENANT.

Julian Corbett.
BUSINESS IN GREAT WATERS.

L. Cope Cornford.
ONS OF ADVERSITY.

Stephen Crane.
VOUNDS IN THE RAIN.

B. M. Croker.
STATE SECRET.
EGGY OF THE BARTONS.

Hope Dawlish.
SECRETARY OF LEGATION.

A. J. Dawson.
DANIEL WHITE.

Evelyn Dickinson.
A VICAR'S WIFE.
THE SIN OF ANGELS.

Harris Dickson.
THE BLACK WOLF'S BREED.

Menie Muriel Dowie.
THE CROOK OF THE BOUGH.

Mrs. Dudeney.
THE THIRD FLOOR.

Sara Jeannette Duncan.
A VOYAGE OF CONSOLATION.
THE PATH OF A STAR.

G. Manville Fenn.
AN ELECTRIC SPARK.
THE STAR GAZERS.
ELI'S CHILDREN.
A DOUBLE KNOT.

Jane H. Findlater.
A DAUGHTER OF STRIFE.
RACHEL.

Mary Findlater.
BETTY MUSGRAVE.

Jane H. and Mary Findlater.
TALES THAT ARE TOLD.

J. S. Fletcher.
THE PATHS OF THE PRUDENT.
THE BUILDERS.

M. E. Francis.
MISS ERIN.

Mary Gaunt.
KIRKHAM'S FIND.
DEADMAN'S.
THE MOVING FINGER.

Dorothea Gerard.
THINGS THAT HAVE HAPPENED.

R. Murray Gilchrist.
WILLOWBRAKE.

George Gissing.
THE CROWN OF LIFE.

Charles Gleig.
BUNTER'S CRUISE.

S. Gordon.
A HANDFUL OF EXOTICS.

C. F. Goss.
THE REDEMPTION OF DAVID CORSON.

E. M'Queen Gray.
MY STEWARDSHIP.
ELSA.

Robert Hichens.
BYEWAYS.

I. Hooper.
THE SINGER OF MARLY.

Emily Lawless.
HURRISH.
MAELCHO.

Norma Lorimer.
MIRRY-ANN.
JOSIAH'S WIFE.

Edna Lyall.
DERRICK VAUGHAN, NOVELIST.

Hannah Lynch.
AN ODD EXPERIMENT.

Richard Marsh.
THE SEEN AND THE UNSEEN.
MARVELS AND MYSTERIES.

W. E. Norris.
MATTHEW AUSTIN.
HIS GRACE.
THE DESPOTIC LADY.
CLARISSA FURIOSA.
GILES INGILBY.
AN OCTAVE.
JACK'S FATHER.
A DEPLORABLE AFFAIR.

Mrs. Oliphant.
SIR ROBERT'S FORTUNE.
THE TWO MARYS.
THE LADY'S WALK.
THE PRODIGALS.

Mary A. Owen.
THE DAUGHTER OF ALOUETTE.

Mary L. Pendered.
AN ENGLISHMAN.

Mrs. Penny.
A FOREST OFFICER.

R. Orton Prowse.
THE POISON OF ASPS.

Richard Pryce.
TIME AND THE WOMAN.
THE QUIET MRS. FLEMING.

W. Pett Ridge.
A SON OF THE STATE.
SECRETARY TO BAYNE, M.P.

Morley Roberts.
THE PLUNDERERS.

Marshall Saunders.
ROSE A CHARLITTE.

W. C. Scully.
THE WHITE HECATOMB.
BETWEEN SUN AND SAND.
A VENDETTA OF THE DESERT.

R. N. Stephens.
AN ENEMY TO THE KING.
A GENTLEMAN PLAYER.

E. H. Strain.
ELMELIE'S DRAG-NET.

Esmé Stuart.
A WOMAN OF FORTY.
CHRISTALLA.

Duchess of Sutherland.
ONE HOUR AND THE NEXT.

Benjamin Swift.
SIREN CITY.

Victor Waite.
CROSS TRAILS.

Mrs. Walford.
SUCCESSORS TO THE TITLE.

Percy White.
A PASSIONATE PILGRIM.

Mrs. C. N. Williamson.
THE ADVENTURE OF PRINCESS SYLVIA.

X. L.
AUT DIABOLUS AUT NIHIL.

Books for Boys and Girls

Crown 8vo. 3s. 6d.

THE ICELANDER'S SWORD. By S. Baring-Gould.
TWO LITTLE CHILDREN AND CHING. By Edith E. Cuthell.
TODDLEKIN'S HERO. By M. M. Blake.
ONLY A GUARD-ROOM DOG. By Edith E. Cuthell.
THE DOCTOR OF THE JULIET. By Harry Collingwood.
MASTER ROCKAFELLAR'S VOYAGE. By W. Clark Russell.
SYD BELTON: Or, the Boy who would not go to Sea. By G. Manville Fenn.
THE RED GRANGE. By Mrs. Molesworth.
THE SECRET OF MADAME DE MONLUC. By the Author of 'Mdle. Mori.'
DUMPS. By Mrs. Parr.
A GIRL OF THE PEOPLE. By L. T. Meade.
HEPSY GIPSY. By L. T. Meade. 2s. 6d.
THE HONOURABLE MISS. By L. T. Meade.

The Novelist

MESSRS. METHUEN are issuing under the above general title a Monthly Series of Novels by popular authors at the price of Sixpence. Some of these Novels have never been published before. Each number is as long as the average Six Shilling Novel. The first numbers of 'THE NOVELIST' are as follows:—

I. DEAD MEN TELL NO TALES. By E. W. Hornung.
II. JENNIE BAXTER, JOURNALIST. By Robert Barr.
III. THE INCA'S TREASURE. By Ernest Glanville.
IV. A SON OF THE STATE. By W. Pett Ridge.
V. FURZE BLOOM. By S. Baring-Gould.
VI. BUNTER'S CRUISE. By C. Gleig.
VII. THE GAY DECEIVERS. By Arthur Moore.
VIII. PRISONERS OF WAR. By A. Boyson Weekes.
IX. *Out of print.*
X. VELDT AND LAAGER: Tales of the Transvaal. By E. S. Valentine.
XI. THE NIGGER KNIGHTS. By F. Norreys Connel.
XII. A MARRIAGE AT SEA. By W. Clark Russell.
XIII. THE POMP OF THE LAVILETTES. By Gilbert Parker.
XIV. A MAN OF MARK. By Anthony Hope.
XV. THE CARISSIMA. By Lucas Malet.
XVI. THE LADY'S WALK. By Mrs. Oliphant.
XVII. DERRICK VAUGHAN. By Edna Lyall.
XVIII. IN THE MIDST OF ALARMS. By Robert Barr.
XIX. HIS GRACE. By W. E. Norris.
XX. DODO. By E. F. Benson.
XXI. CHEAP JACK ZITA. By S. Baring-Gould.
XXII. WHEN VALMOND CAME TO PONTIAC. By Gilbert Parker.
XXIII. THE HUMAN BOY. By Eden Phillpotts.
XXIV. THE CHRONICLES OF COUNT ANTONIO. By Anthony Hope.
XXV. BY STROKE OF SWORD. By Andrew Balfour.
XXVI. KITTY ALONE. By S. Baring-Gould.
XXVII. GILES INGILBY. By W. E. Norris.
XXVIII. URITH. By S. Baring-Gould.
XXIX. THE TOWN TRAVELLER. By George Gissing.
XXX. MR. SMITH. By Mrs. Walford.
XXXI. A CHANGE OF AIR. By Anthony Hope.

Methuen's Sixpenny Library

A New Series of Copyright and non-Copyright Books

THE MATABELE CAMPAIGN. By Major-General Baden-Powell.
THE DOWNFALL OF PREMPEH. By Major-General Baden-Powell.
MY DANISH SWEETHEART. By W. Clark Russell.
IN THE ROAR OF THE SEA. By S. Baring-Gould.
PEGGY OF THE BARTONS. By B. M. Croker.
THE GREEN GRAVES OF BALGOWRIE. By Jane H. Findlater.
THE STOLEN BACILLUS. By H. G. Wells.
MATTHEW AUSTIN. By W. E. Norris.
THE CONQUEST OF LONDON. By Dorothea Gerard.
A VOYAGE OF CONSOLATION. By Sara J. Duncan.
THE MUTABLE MANY. By Robert Barr.
BEN HUR. By General Lew Wallace.
SIR ROBERT'S FORTUNE. By Mrs. Oliphant.
THE FAIR GOD. By General Lew Wallace.
CLARISSA FURIOSA. By W. E. Norris.
NOEMI. By S. Baring-Gould.
THE THRONE OF DAVID. By J. H. Ingraham.
ACROSS THE SALT SEAS. By J. Bloundelle Burton.

This book should be returned to the Library on or before the last date stamped below.

A fine of five cents a day is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

DUE AUG 18 47

STALL STUDY

CANCELLED

JAN 18 '66 H

CANCELLED

CANCELLED

BOOK DUE WID

FEB 15 1978

CANCELLED

11 1978

89342